

Finding Jesus
Finding Life

Dee Henderson

© copyright 2021 by Dee Henderson. All rights reserved.

Permission is granted to copy any pages of this book for personal use and/or bible study or classroom handout, but not for resale.

Permission is granted for portions of this text to be inserted into another publication so long as they are quoted as written and the author and title are indicated as their source.

All other rights are reserved. No part of this publication may be reproduced, stored in retrieval system, or transmitted in any form or by any means – for example, electronic, photocopy, recording – without the express written permission of the publisher.

Contact the author/publisher:

dee@deehenderson.com

www.deehenderson.com

current printing revision: September 27, 2021

This hardback edition includes four titles in one hardback format:

The Good News Project

Jesus: the Truth and the Life

Jesus: our Savior and Redeemer

Being a disciple of Jesus Christ

A Note from the Author:

Daily I have been asking God the question: Father, what is on your heart that you most wish I knew today?

God has been talking to me about Jesus and what God has done for us through Jesus. We have been exploring the topics of righteousness and life.

These four titles are from 2019 to 2021 and are presented in the order they were written. The fresh discoveries of 2019 become more detailed understandings as the year 2021 concludes.

I invite you to come explore the scriptures with me.

*

The Good News Project

Dee Henderson

© copyright 2019 by Dee Henderson. All rights reserved.

Permission is granted to copy any pages of this book for personal use and/or bible study or classroom handout, but not for resale.

Permission is granted for portions of this text to be inserted into another publication so long as they are quoted as written and the author and title are indicated as their source.

All other rights are reserved. No part of this publication may be reproduced, stored in retrieval system, or transmitted in any form or by any means – for example, electronic, photocopy, recording – without the express written permission of the publisher.

Contact the author/publisher:

dee@deehenderson.com

www.deehenderson.com

current printing revision: May 1, 2021

RSV: Scripture quotations marked RSV are taken from the Revised Standard Version of the Bible, copyright © 1946, 1952 and 1971 National Council of the Churches of Christ in the United States of America. Used by permission. All rights reserved worldwide.

YLT: Scripture quotations marked YLT are from the Young's Literal Translation of the bible.

INT: Scripture quotations marked INT are taken from the Interlinear Hebrew-Greek-English Bible, Jay P. Green, Sr. General Editor and Translator, copyright © 1976, 1977, 1980, 1981, 1984, 1985 by Jay Green Sr.

Scriptures not marked by source are from the King James Version (KJV) or the Greek and Hebrew of the Interlinear Hebrew-Greek-English Bible (INT) as worded or punctuated by the author.

Why read this book

I am going to show you a simple project I did over the course of a year and give you its results. I hope to convince you to do the same project for yourself.

The Good News Project

Each morning ask the question:

God, what is the thing you most wish I knew today?

Then spend time with God so He can answer your question.

Foundations

This project rests upon three basic premises:

premise 1: Jesus is a teacher.

premise 2: Jesus will always tell us the truth.

premise 3: Jesus likes to answer questions.

Jesus said – You call me the Teacher and the Lord, and well you say, for I am. John 13:13

Jesus said – I am the way and the truth and the life. John 14:6 I speak the truth. John 8:45

privately to his disciples Jesus explained all things. Mark 4:34b

Additional help

Ask God:

Where should I read in the bible today?

Read the book and chapter that comes to mind.

Ask God:

What do you want me to see and understand?

Underline words that catch your attention.

Ask God for help:

I don't understand these verses. Would you please explain this to me in as simple of terms as you would to a young child?

A basic observation

When God tells you something he most wants you to know, you will know something important which you did not know the day before.

Thanks for reading to this point

My project results begin on the next pages. If you want to stop here and do the project for yourself rather than read my results, you now have all the instructions you need to have a successful project of your own.

One of my observations is that the value of the project increases with time, the discoveries at the end of the year are greater than those at the first of the year. God used each day to build a foundation of things I knew and then daily he built higher. The process is simple. Where it takes you is somewhere remarkable.

My project results

My project results – part 1 of 6

God started out teaching me how he teaches. Jesus pointed out this gem early on.

Whom shall He [God] teach knowledge? And (to) whom shall He explain the message? Those weaned from milk, those moving from breasts. For rule (is) on rule, rule on rule; line on line, line on line; a little there, a little there. (Isaiah 28:9-10)

God doesn't tell the meat of scripture to those who still need to receive milk. He teaches from where you are and causes you to grow. It's rule on rule – you see a truth and then another truth will build on that one. It's line on line – God draws together what you are learning to fit together into a whole. It's gathered a little there, a little there. That means we gather daily and we gather across all scripture. You will find part of your answers in the new testament and part in the old testament. The 66 books that make up the Bible together form one presentation.

I would ask every day where do you want me to read? More than 100 times Jesus answered with either Isaiah 14 or Mark 4. In Mark 4 is this instruction:

be careful what you hear. (Mark 4:24a INT)

It means if you want to know truth, only listen to truth. I didn't realize when the year started that I was obeying this verse, I just wanted my new 4-volume Hebrew-Greek-English Interlinear Bible and the Strong's dictionary of Greek and Hebrew Words to be my priority for the year, so I had stopped reading other books. I had shifted what I was hearing to only listen to Jesus. God says, 'this is my Son, the beloved, hear him.' (Luke 9:35). I did and it created a remarkable year.

God taught me he would present a topic and then explain it and add details and that information would be spread across several books of the bible. For example:

Ask, and it shall be given you; seek, and you shall find; knock, and it shall be opened to you. (Matthew 7:7)

What are we to ask for?

Jesus said – “If you...know how to give good gifts to your children, how much more shall your heavenly Father give the Holy Spirit to those who ask him!” (Luke 11:13)

What are we to seek?

Jesus said – do not be anxious, saying, ‘What shall we eat?’ or ‘What shall we drink?’ or ‘What shall we wear?’ For all these things the nations seek; and your heavenly Father knows that you need all of them. But seek first the kingdom of God and his righteousness, and all these things shall be yours as well. (Matthew 6:31-33)

What door does God want to open?

pray together also for us, that God may open to us a door for the word, to declare the mystery of Christ,...that I may make it clear, as I ought to speak. (Colossians 4:3-4)

Jesus showed me there is a progression in these instructions. We first ask for the Holy Spirit. Then with the Holy Spirit guiding us into all truth, we seek the kingdom of God and God’s righteousness. Once we find the kingdom of God and his righteousness, we knock for a door to be opened so we can effectively share the good news about Jesus with others.

*

Jesus reassured me that time with him would yield real benefits in my life.

Jesus then said to the Jews who had believed in him, "If you abide in my word, you are truly my disciples, and you will know the truth, and the truth will set you free." (John 8:31-32)

My project results – part 2 of 6

God taught me the details of what happened when I was baptized and how that gave me life.

Jesus was crucified, he died, was buried and raised (resurrected). When we are baptized, we also are crucified, we die, are buried and then raised (resurrected) with Jesus.

they put Jesus to death on a cross, they buried him in a tomb, God raised Jesus on the third day, witnesses ate and drank with Jesus after he rose from the dead, and the apostles gave testimony to the resurrection of the Jesus.
(see Acts 10:34-43, Acts 4:33, Matthew chapters 27 & 28)

I am baptized into Jesus (into his experience) (see Romans 6:3)

I am crucified with Jesus (see Romans 6:6)

I die with Jesus (see Romans 6:8)

I am buried with Jesus in baptism (see Colossians 2:12)

I am made alive together with Jesus (see Ephesians 2:4-7)

I am raised (resurrected) with Jesus in baptism (see Colossians 2:12)

I am now new. The old is gone. (see 2 Corinthians 5:17-18)

I have been born a spirit from above. (see John 3:6-7)

God asked me at this point if I understood what had happened to me in baptism. The fact he asked the question was a good clue I was reading the verses but not grasping what they said. So I wisely asked, tell me again as you would to a very young child. We went through the verses underlying words.

To bury something, it has to be dead. To make something alive, it first has to have no life, it has to be dead. You don't bury a soul. You bury a body. The death we experience in baptism is a physical death.

Until Jesus made the comment, ‘Dee, what do you bury?’ I wasn’t seeing what he was trying to teach me. You bury a body. I have to come out of baptism with a new body because the old one has been buried. The old body is gone. God resurrected his son Jesus and me with him. I am now new. I am not partially old and partially new. The old is gone.

I died. I was buried. And God raised me from the dead. I have been resurrected. I have a new body. It happened in my baptism.

But some one will ask, “How are the dead raised? With what kind of body do they come?”

You are sown in corruption, raised in incorruption.

You are sown in dishonor, raised in glory.

You are sown in weakness, raised in power.

You are sown a natural body, raised a spiritual body.

Just as we have borne the image of the man of dust, we shall also bear the image of the man of heaven.

(see 1 Corinthians 15)

I have been baptized into Jesus and I have now put on Jesus Christ. (see Galatians 3:27)

God gave me a new body in baptism that is like Jesus. I have put on Christ. God changed me in an instant, in the twinkle of an eye, to be like his Son Jesus. I am born a spirit from above and I now have a heavenly (spiritual) body - a body for a spirit.

God showed me this is the completion of what he spoke in Genesis in the original creation of mankind. Let us make man in our image (Jesus is the image of God and I am now in Christ) and according to our likeness (God is spirit and now I am too). (see Genesis 1:26, Colossians 1:15, John 4:24) From the very beginning, God desired to create Christians!

My project results – part 2 continued

When I realized I had been resurrected in baptism and given a new body like Jesus, God then showed me what He most wanted me to see.

it is appointed for men once to die, and after this comes judgment (see Hebrews 9:27a)

Jesus said – “Truly, truly, I say to you, the one hearing my word and believing him who sent me, has eternal life and does not come into judgment, but has passed out of death into life.” (John 5:24)

A Christian does not enter judgment because Jesus was judged for our sins in our place on the cross. A Christian dies in baptism and by grace passes directly from death into life. We are resurrected in baptism, we are made alive with Christ.

Jesus said – “My sheep hear my voice, and I know them, and they follow me; and I give them eternal life, and they shall never die, and no one shall pluck them out of my hand.” (John 10:27-28)

The good news is not that we die, go to heaven, and then live forever. The good news is that we now live forever and never physically die. We have become like Jesus, death no longer has dominion over us. (see Romans 6:8-9)

Once means only once. It is appointed to man once to die. We die in baptism. Our one death is now in the rear view mirror. We will never die again. We now have life, physical life, that never ends as a gift from God.

It is the glory of God to conceal a matter, but the glory of kings to search out a matter. (Proverbs 25:2)

God concealed in plain sight the good news that I could start planning my 200th birthday on earth. So I have.

How did we miss seeing something so profound? We think we have to see our death for it to be real. We forget that the things seen are temporary, but the things unseen are permanent, eternal. The death God tells us happened in our baptism is our actual death.

the things being seen are transient, but the things unseen are everlasting. (2 Corinthians 4:18)

God then showed me this good news was a cornerstone of what Jesus had been teaching his disciples.

Truly, truly, I say to you, he believing in me has eternal life. (John 6:47)

this is the will of my Father who sent me, that every one who sees the Son and believes in him may have eternal life (John 6:40)

Truly, truly, I say to you, if any one keeps my word, he shall never see death. (John 8:51)

For even as the Father raises the dead and makes alive, so also the Son gives life to whom he will. (John 5:21)

I [Jesus] am the way, and the truth, and the life; no one comes to the Father, but by me. (John 14:6b)

I [Jesus] am the bread of life. ... He who eats my flesh [the bread] and drinks my blood [the juice] abides in me and I in him. As the living Father sent me and I [Jesus] live because of the Father, so he who eats me will live because of me. (John 6:48, 56-57 RSV)

Jesus says he is the life. I always have Jesus abiding in me. So therefore I have eternal life. It's literal. Eternal life has already begun. It isn't something which begins at some time in the future. Jesus is the mechanism, the how, for this gift of eternal life. It's his presence in me. The moment I received Jesus as my Savior I received eternal life. Eternal means something that always is. God is eternal.

My part is simple. I take communion and celebrate Jesus. I remember Jesus sacrificed his body on the cross to set me free from sin and death. (see Romans 8:1-2) Jesus now abides in me and I in him. Life abides in me.

We have over complicated Christianity and missed seeing its basic beauty.

Adam and Eve had a perfect life in Eden.

Adam sinned. Bad news. The penalty of sin was death.

Jesus, the Son of God, came. "Behold, the Lamb of God who takes away the sin of the world!" Good news.

We have returned to life as it was before. Sin is gone by God's grace. So is the penalty of death. God has restored us. We have been perfected forever by the sacrificial offering of the body of Jesus Christ.

That's Christianity.

(see John 1:29; Romans 5:8-10 & 8:1-2; Hebrews 10:10,14; 2 Corinthians 5:14-21)

He who does not believe God has made him a liar, because he has not believed in the testimony that God has borne to his Son. And this is the testimony, that God gave us eternal life, and this life is in his Son. He who has the Son has life; he who has not the Son of God has not life. I [John] write this to you who believe in the name of the Son of God, that

you may know that you have eternal life. (1 John 5:10b-13 RSV)

What did God most want me to know? That He gave me life and I will never physically die. Wow! Thank you, God!

My project results – part 3 of 6

God taught me he has made me righteous and has set me free from sin.

Because I have died, I have been set free from sin.
(see Romans 6:7, Romans 6:22)

No one born of God commits sin; for God's nature abides in him, and he cannot sin because he is born of God. (1 John 3:9 RSV)

God has sent the spirit of his son Jesus into my heart (see Galatians 4:6)

God's love has been poured into my heart (see Romans 5:5)

I have the mind of Christ. (see 1 Corinthians 2:16)

I don't have to fight sin. My old nature is gone. I am not a sinner. I am a saint. I cannot sin because God's nature abides in me. I have been made righteous so I can live doing what is right.

God first told me I would live forever. Then he reassured me how I would live. The old sin nature is gone. I am a new creation. I have received the same righteous nature as Jesus.

An apple tree only produces apples. An apple tree doesn't have to struggle not to bear oranges. Likewise, a good tree can only produce good fruit. (see Luke 6:43-45) I am now a good tree. I can only bear good fruit. And God now richly rewards me for doing that good which is now my new nature.

For he [God] will render to every man according to his works: to those who by patience work good, seeking glory and honor and immortality, he will give eternal life; but for those who are factious and do not obey the truth, but obey wickedness, there will be wrath and fury. There will be tribulation and distress for every human being who does evil, the Jew first and also the Greek, but glory and honor and peace for everyone working out the good, the Jew first and also the Greek. For God shows no partiality. (Romans 2:6-11)

No one is good but God alone. (Mark 10:18b RSV)

working out the good – it literally means working out God

work out your own salvation with fear and trembling; for God is at work in you, both to will and to work for his good pleasure. (Philippians 2:12b-13 RSV)

fear and trembling is a reference to Psalm 2.

Serve Jehovah with fear, and rejoice with trembling. Kiss the Son, lest he be angry and you perish (from) the way (Psalms 2:11-12a INT)

The desire in you to seek God, to abide in the word, to do the right thing, to sing praises to God, to thank God – that is God at work within you. Do those things. Love the word of God. Love Jesus. You will see your salvation.

For the kingdom of God is righteousness and peace and joy in the Holy Spirit; he who thus serves Christ is well-pleasing to God and approved by men. (see Romans 14:17-18)

What did God most want me to know? I will live forever doing what is right because I am like Jesus. How very wonderful indeed! Thank you, God!

My project results – part 4 of 6

God gave me really good news about the kingdom of God.

God has delivered us out of the authority of darkness and placed us in the kingdom of his beloved Son (see Colossians 1:13)

I am now in the kingdom of Jesus. The kingdom of God isn't a future event. Thy kingdom come, thy will be done, on earth as it is in heaven - that prayer has been answered. I now live in the kingdom of Jesus on earth.

*

God then confirmed in several ways what he had been teaching me about the topics of life and righteousness.

ITEM 1

Righteousness delivers from death. (Proverbs 11:4b INT)

Those who receive the abundance of grace and the free gift of righteousness reign in life through Jesus Christ. (Romans 5:17)

The fruit of the righteous is a tree of life (Proverbs 11:30a RSV)

You will not give the holy one of you to see corruption. You reveal to me paths of life. (see Acts 2:27b-28a)

What is the path of life? Righteousness. Jesus takes away our sins which makes us righteous, we are without sin. We have been made holy, its the same Greek word translated saints. Righteousness is being made right. When you see you are righteous as a free gift you have found the path of life. When sin is gone, there is no penalty of death. You don't die. As it is written, "The righteous through faith shall live." (Romans 1:17b)

ITEM 2

The first man Adam is a living soul, the last Adam [Jesus] is a life-giving spirit. The first man Adam was out of earth, earthly, the last man Adam is the Lord out of heaven. Just as we have borne the image of the man of dust, we shall also bear the image of the man of heaven. (see 1 Corinthians 15:45,47,49)

After Noah's flood God set a limit on the first Adam's life at 120 years. (see Genesis 6:3) God won't violate his own word. So in order for a Christian to live past 120 years we can't still be a first Adam man out of earth. God's solution is for us to cease to be a first Adam man. In baptism the first Adam man dies and a child of God is born. We become like Jesus.

We received a spirit of adoption, by which we cry, 'Abba, Father!' The Spirit bears witness with our spirit that we are children of God. (Romans 8:15b-16)

I have said Gods you are, and sons of the Most High, all of you. (Psalm 82:6)

ITEM 3

Flesh and blood is not able to inherit the kingdom of God. (1 Corinthians 15:50)

Except one receive birth of water and spirit he is not able to enter into the kingdom of God. (John 3:5)

Stop fearing, little flock, because your Father was pleased to give you the kingdom. (Luke 12:32)

We get a new body in baptism so that we can now enter the kingdom of God. A child of God can enter the kingdom of God. A first Adam man out of earth can not because he has

not been born from above (from heaven).

ITEM 4

We now bear the image of Jesus. This couldn't happen until Jesus came in AD 33 and died on the cross. This is why the old testament saints could be made righteous but would still die. They only had a soul. They still bore the image of the first living soul Adam. Moses, for example, could only live 120 years. Old testament saints had the promise of salvation coming in the Messiah. But Jesus hasn't come yet. Old Testament saints didn't have baptism in Jesus name, they were not yet able to be born of spirit. (see 1 Corinthians 15)

The promise to Abraham was the spirit. (see Galatians 3:14) The promise to Abraham was to be changed from a man with a living soul into a child of God with a living spirit. To be changed in an instant from the glory of an Adam man to the glory of a son of God. 'As the outcome of your faith you obtain the salvation of your souls.' (1 Peter 1:9 RSV) The salvation of your soul is the gift of the spirit.

ITEM 5

Those of Christ crucified the flesh with the passions and the lusts. (see Galatians 5:24)

The nice thing about God is He isn't subtle. God crucified our flesh, the source of sinful lusts and passions. God killed it, buried it, and left it in the grave. The old is gone. The new has come. We are new and we are now entirely good.

Jesus died and was buried so that he would bear much fruit – us. (see John 12:23-26) A seed reproduces after its kind. Jesus has a spirit and a body. So do we. You can't be born partially. You can't be born with a spirit and not a body. And you aren't a mixed birth. You can't be born with a

righteous spirit put into a sin nature body. The spirit is at war with the flesh. In baptism all of you is made new. You are made righteous. You are made right. Jesus reproduces exactly like himself in both spirit and body. We are now a child of God where Jesus is the firstborn. We look like Jesus.

ITEM 6

God has given us all things pertaining to life and godliness. We now partake of the divine nature. We have escaped from the corruption in the world. (see 2 Peter 1:3-4)

We are a child of God. We are born again without sin, holy, righteous, having life that lasts forever. We keep waiting for more to happen not realizing the date everything happened for us was the date of our baptism, the day we were born new. We are born a spirit and given a heavenly (spiritual) body - a body for a spirit.

I have a heavenly body. It is good and perfect, incorruptible and immortal. I bear the image of the man from heaven, Jesus, just as I previously bore the image of the first Adam man out of earth. I am born with this image. I don't do anything to have it other than be born.

I have been born a child of God. I have a heavenly body. Thank you, God!

ITEM 7

my people die for lack of knowledge. (see Hosea 4:6). How does a lack of knowledge cause you to die? Jesus says the word is your judge. (see John 12:48). It is scripture which says a sinner dies, a first Adam man dies. So if you believe you are still either a sinner or a man out of the earth, you will die. You are corrupting yourself with a lie. You are lying to yourself about who you now are.

How does God handle this? Jesus is the word. (see John 1). Jesus always tells us the truth. Jesus is a teacher. Explaining scripture so we understand the truth is what Jesus excels at doing.

If you continue in my word, truly my disciples you are, and you will know the truth and the truth will set you free. (John 8:31b-32)

The word shows me God has set me free of sin, free of death, and free of corruption. When I believe the word, I am set free forever. The gifts of God are irrevocable, which means they are mine forever. My freedom is a gift from God. Jesus sets me free.

ITEM 8

The ministry of the spirit is in glory. The ministry of righteousness abounds in glory. (see 2 Corinthians 3) A lot of what we have been hoping to receive in the future – life, glory, the kingdom – is already ours in the present. We need to see it so we can have it. You can only believe what you know. We have been glorified with Jesus. God's glory shines. That's why Jesus says we are the light of the world. (see Matthew 5:14).

My project results – part 4 continued

Why have Christians been dying for 2,000 years? Jesus provides the answer in Mark 4 when he quotes from Isaiah 6.

Here's Isaiah 6. Isaiah is speaking.

My eyes have seen The King, Jehovah of hosts. ... And I heard the voice of the Lord saying, whom shall I send and who will go for us? Then I said, Here am I, send me! And he said, Go and tell this people, hear, but hearing do not understand, and see, but seeing not do know. Make fat the heart of this people, and his ears make heavy, and his eyes shut, lest he see with his eyes, and with his ears hear, and with his heart understand and turn and one heals him. Then I said, until when, O Lord? And he said, until that might lie desolate cities without inhabitant, and even the houses without man, and the land laid waste a desolation. And Jehovah has sent far away mankind and great the desolation in the midst of the land. (Isaiah 6:5,8-12)

Here's Mark 4 where Jesus quotes this Isaiah 6 passage. Jesus has just told the crowd the parable about sowing seed where the seed falls on four types of ground.

And when he became alone, asked him those around him with the twelve the parable. And he said to them, to you has been given to know the mystery of the kingdom of God, but to these outside in parables all things become, that seeing they may see and not perceive, and hearing they may hear and not understand, lest they should convert and be forgiven their sins. And he says to them, know you not this parable? And how all the parables will you know? He sowing the word sows. (Mark 4:10-14)

Notice Jesus quotes only part of the Isaiah passage. He was giving his disciples a reference in the old testament so they

would know what he wanted them to read in full. This is that. Jesus brings together what the old testament said was coming, with what he is doing as the Savior.

Look at what Jesus connects. God says to Isaiah, lest they turn and one heals him. Jesus, who is God, says lest they should convert and be forgiven their sins. They are the same thing. In Isaiah God says what happens, in Mark God says how it happens. Once your sins are forgiven, the penalty of death is gone. Without death, there is no sickness. You are healed. You live.

Look at the last line of Isaiah 6, Jehovah has sent far away mankind. Jehovah has always planned for us to stop being an Adam man out of the earth. We are now children of God. Because the church doesn't often teach the old testament scriptures we haven't seen and understood the full picture of what Jesus has done for us. Salvation is both forgiveness of sins so we are healed and becoming a child of God so we cease to be a first Adam man. We still think either we are a sinner or a man out of the earth, or both. That's why Christians have been dying for 2,000 years. There isn't something new God needs to do for us so we live, we just need to see and hear what God has already done for us in Jesus.

God knew this would happen. Look at the next verse of Psalm 82.

I have said Gods you are, and sons of the Most High, all of you. But as man you shall die. (Psalm 82:6-7b)

It's literal. If you remain a first Adam man in actual fact (you haven't been baptized and born from above) or you remain a first Adam man in your thinking (you don't discern you have a new heavenly body), you will die. It isn't God's plan. But God gives you free will. God's people die for lack of knowledge. The only way to get knowledge

is to abide in the word and learn what God did for you. It's Mark 4:24a INT - be careful what you hear. If you listen to truth, listen to Jesus, you will find life.

*

A woman named Martha received Jesus into her house. She had a sister named Mary, who, sitting beside the feet of Jesus, heard his words. But Martha was distracted by much serving. And coming to Jesus Martha said, Lord, don't you care that my sister has left me alone to serve? Tell her that she should help me. Jesus answered her, Martha, Martha, you are anxious and troubled about many things. But one thing is the need. Mary has chose the good part which shall not be taken from her. (see Luke 10:38-42)

Jesus loved Martha and Mary. (see John 11:5). Martha was busy trying to serve Jesus, but in doing so, she did not hear what Jesus was teaching. Mary was listening carefully. The good part we must have is to listen to Jesus. Martha was distracted and anxious and troubled.

Jesus gives us peace and rest. We live in the kingdom of God at peace and in rest. From there we are able to help the world. We must find life and righteousness and the kingdom of God for ourselves before we can share those things with others.

Those who seek God shall lack no good thing. (see Psalm 34) Those who seek God, who listen to Jesus, will have good news to share and an open door in which to share it.

*

What did God most want me to know? I am now in the kingdom of God. As a child of God, I am born with a heavenly body. Thank you, God!

My project results – part 5 of 6

I live. I am righteous. I have a heavenly body. I am now in the kingdom of God. So it raised an interesting question. God, what do I now do? If I'm going to live 200 years on the earth or 2,000 years, what is the plan? How do I spend my time?

God showed me I follow Jesus.

I am baptized.

I die.

I am resurrected.

I sit on a throne.

I am a king.

I reign. (see Revelation 5:9-10)

How do I rule? I rule by speaking.

The word of a king has power. (see Ecclesiastes 8:4)

We receive power when the Holy Spirit comes. (see Luke 24:49)

I will give you the keys of the kingdom of the heavens, and whatever you bind on earth shall occur, having been bound in the heavens, and whatever you loose on earth shall occur, having been loosed in the heavens. (see Matthew 16:19)

I am born a spirit. The Holy Spirit now dwells in me.

(See John 3:6, John 14:17)

My spirit speaks a new language. (see Acts 2:1-4)

I speak mysteries. I speak the plans of God.

(see 1 Corinthians 14:2, 1 Corinthians 2)

Jehovah takes pleasure in his people, he adorns the humble with salvation. Let exult the saints in glory, let them sing aloud on their beds, the exaltation of God in their throats, and a two-edged sword in their hand, to execute vengeance

on the nations, punishment on the peoples, to bind their kings with chains and their nobles with bands of iron, to execute on them the judgment written. This honor is for all his saints. Praise Jehovah! (Psalm 149:4-9)

I have a two-edged sword. The sword of the spirit, the word of God. When I pray in spirit I take up that sword and use it. (see Ephesians 6:17-18, Hebrews 4:12)

We are binding kings and nobles to the will of God. We are ruling the earth.

This is the honor of all the saints. It's an incredible honor!

We can say as King David:
the spirit of Jehovah has spoken by me
and his word is on my tongue (2 Samuel 23:2 INT)

The God of Israel has spoken,
the Rock of Israel has said to me:
When one rules justly over men,
ruling in the fear of God,
he dawns on them like the morning light,
like the sun shining forth upon a cloudless morning,
like rain that makes grass to sprout from the earth.
(2 Samuel 23:3-4 RSV)

Jesus' voice sounds like many waters. And out of his mouth proceeds a sharp two-edge sword. (see Revelation 1:15-16)

Christians drink living water (the Holy Spirit) and out of our belly flows rivers of living water. (see John 7:37-39). Jesus' voice sounds like many waters because many Christians seated with Jesus on his throne are speaking. We are in Christ. The sharp two-edged sword proceeding out of the mouth of Jesus is the word of God we are speaking.

The reward for humility and the fear of the Lord is riches and honor and life. (Proverbs 22:4 RSV) Our honor is to reign.

What did God most want me to know? I am a King in the Kingdom of God. I am seated with Christ on his throne. God honors me. He gives me rule of the earth by what I speak.

My project results – part 6 of 6

God then showed me some hidden treasures.

Jesus is a teacher. Jesus would tell a parable, then Jesus would pause and explain the parable and provide definitions. For example: he sowing the word sows. (Mark 4:14) So in other parables where Jesus talks about seed being sown, you know he's speaking of the word of God. It turns out God pauses and explains in the old testament the same way. Here's a very useful explanation.

Now Egypt is a man and not God, and their horses are flesh and not spirit. (Isaiah 31:3)

Given God's explanation, consider these three passages:

When Israel was a child then I loved him, and out of Egypt I called my son. (Hosea 11:1)

God has predestined us to be conformed to the image of Jesus. Those whom he called, he justified and glorified. (see Romans 8:29-30)

I have said Gods you are, and sons of the Most High, all of you. (Psalm 82:6)

I have called my son out of Egypt. It was literal, Jesus sojourned as a young child in Egypt. It also has a deeper meaning. I have called my son out of Egypt – out of Adam man. In baptism we are born a spirit. We are now a Son of the Most High. We are now conformed to the image of Jesus. We have ceased to be an Adam man out of earth and become a child of God.

The bible is 66 books but it's the same author. The more you read, the more of these explanations and definitions

you find. The more you locate, the deeper your understanding becomes. It's one whole narrative pointing to Jesus and what God does for us through Jesus.

*

One of my favorite connections is between 1 Corinthians and the book of Jeremiah:

you were washed, you were sanctified, you were justified in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ and in the Holy Spirit of our God. (1 Corinthians 6:11b RSV)

Notice all these words are past tense, it's finished. You have been washed, sanctified and made righteous. It happens at your baptism. You were baptized into the name of the Father, the Son and the Holy Spirit. (see Matthew 28:18-20)

Now look at what Jeremiah tells us about the names we have been baptized into.

What is the name of the Father? Jehovah lives. (see Jeremiah 12:16a INT)

What is the name of the Jesus? Jehovah our Righteousness. (see Jeremiah 23:6b INT)

What is our new name? Jehovah our Righteousness. (see Jeremiah 33:16b INT)

Notice we've been given the same name as Jesus. We are conformed to him. We are the New Jerusalem. (see Revelation 3:12)

What is the name of the Holy Spirit? The Spirit of Truth, The Spirit of Holiness. (see John 14:17 INT) The Holy Spirit is the breath of life. (see Genesis 3:7 INT)

A name describes the nature of what something is. Salt is the name of a chemical compound. Blue is the name for a specific light wavelength. We bear God's name. We are righteous. We are holy. We live.

My project results – part 6 continued

First Jesus cleared up what I thought was the good news. The good news is not that we die, go to heaven, then live forever. The good news is that we live and never die. Then Jesus began putting the timing of things in order, pointing out what happened and when it occurred. Over the course of the year, Jesus took my understanding of what happened and simply shoved the time frame left.

When did Jesus take away the sin of the world?
at his baptism

John the Baptist, declares, ‘Behold the Lamb of God, who takes away the sin of the world!’ The next day John the Baptist sees Jesus walking and says only, ‘Behold, the lamb of God!’ John didn’t add the second part of the sentence because there was no more sin in the world to take away. John didn’t forget what the Messiah had come to do. John was declaring Jesus had finished his work of taking the sin of the world. John had one job, to make straight the way of the Lord. Repent and be baptized for the forgiveness of sins. John declares how Jesus would remove sin. (see John 1:29-36, Luke 3)

Jesus obeys God. Jesus repents and is baptized for the forgiveness of sins. Jesus had no sin of his own to be forgiven. Jesus was acting on our behalf as our High Priest. Jesus repents and is baptized on behalf of all mankind, for everyone who will ever be born, for all sin, past, present, and future. Jesus has now fulfilled all righteousness. (see Matthew 3). Jesus has taken away the sin of the world.

This is why Jesus tells the mourners to stop crying. He says the 12-year-old girl is not dead but sleeping. (see Luke 8:49-56). Jesus isn’t lying to them. Sin is already gone from the world, so is the penalty of death. It happened at his

baptism. The most someone can do is sleep, there is no more death in the world.

This is why Jesus healed all their diseases. Surely he took all our pains and our infirmities. (see Matthew 8:17, Isaiah 53:4). There is no more penalty of death and death is the source of sickness.

Revelation 21 has been fulfilled. And Himself God will be with them...and death will not be longer, nor mourning, nor outcry, nor pain not will be longer, for the things first went away.

God was walking around with them. Jesus says those who have seen me have seen the Father. I am in the Father and the Father is in me. Jesus came. The Father came. Repent, for the kingdom of God is at hand. They could reach out and touch God.

After his baptism, Jesus comes out of the water and is praying. The heavens tear open and the Holy Spirit comes to abide on Jesus. He's now anointed as the Savior of the world. Having forgiven us, God now saves us – he heals, delivers and restores us. Jesus announces who he is. Isaiah 61, the Spirit of the Lord is upon me, he has anointed me to ... Jesus raises the dead, casts out demons, gives sight to the blind, heals every disease and infirmity among the people. Jesus is God's chosen King. Jesus is giving his people the kingdom of God.

His hour comes. Jesus goes to the cross as the lamb of God, a guilt offering to God for all the sin he has taken from the world. 'Father, forgive them for they don't know what they are doing.' Again, Jesus restores Adam man to righteousness. Specially, all those among men who don't believe he is the Messiah, the Savior of the world. Those that are murdering him. That is who Jesus just forgave. Jesus is the Passover Lamb of God. His sacrifice causes

death to pass over all mankind. Jesus takes the wrath of God upon himself. The fire burns until it is complete.

Jesus took all our sin at his baptism, Jesus carried all our sin to the cross, Jesus died on our behalf because of sin, and the law judging sin was satisfied by his death. Jesus was buried showing the matter was finished.

Jesus rises from the dead without our sin. Jesus is able to return to the righteous Father because all the sin he carried to the cross is forever gone. God, on this side of the cross, is at peace with man. Jesus has taken away all sins. Where there is forgiveness of sins, there is no judgment. So God is free to bless through Jesus all creation. God exalts Jesus to his throne. Jesus receives the Holy Spirit from the Father. And Jesus pours out the spirit on all flesh.

More of Revelation 21 is fulfilled. And said the one sitting on the throne, Behold, I make all things new. And he says to me write, because these words are true and faithful. And he said to me, it is done.

How did Jesus make all things new? He poured out the Holy Spirit. It is the spirit that makes alive. (see John 6:63 INT)

Jesus baptism – sin is gone from the world, so is the penalty of sin death.

Jesus at the cross – the lamb of God is sacrificed, atoning for all sin, taking the wrath of God against those who don't believe and obey Jesus. Unbelief is sin, lawlessness is sin. It's all dealt with at the cross.

Jesus resurrection – the last enemy, death, has been defeated.

Jesus pours out the Holy Spirit – behold, I make all things new.

Write, it is done.

All creation has been restored because the spirit gives life.

*

Jesus says – I do not judge anyone for I came to save the world. You have a judge, the words I have spoken they are your judge. (see John 12:47-50)

Even though on this side of the cross sin is gone from the world, the word remains forever. The word is living and active and powerfully able to discern the thoughts and the intentions of the heart. It is your rebellion against the word which results in your death. Not because the word judges you for something Jesus has already forgiven. It's much more simple. Without Jesus, you don't have life and you need it. Without Jesus, you turn back into dust within 120 years. Jesus has come to give us life. If we believe in him, he abides in us and we live. When you rebel against the scriptures, you die, because you don't have Jesus who is the life you need sustaining you.

The world is creating its own judgment. They are rejecting Jesus and turning back into dust. And it's not just the world, Christians are also bringing judgment on themselves. They eat judgment on themselves by not discerning the body. That is why you are sick, chronically sick, and many sleep. (see 1 Corinthians 11:29-32). We don't discern we have been forgiven, that sin is gone, that we are righteous, that we have been changed, that God gave us a new body at baptism, that we have been raised with a new body free of corruption. We don't see we have been resurrected in baptism and made completely new. We don't see we have put on Jesus, we have put on life. We corrupt ourselves by believing a lie. We think we die, go to heaven and then live forever, so we do.

My project results – part 6 continued

When does Jesus come in the clouds?

Behold, He [Jesus] comes with the clouds and every eye will see Him and those who pierced him, and will wail due to Him all the tribes of the earth. (see Revelation 1:7)

To see happens in two ways. One way depends on time. An event, say an eclipse, is going to happen one hour from now – you go outside and look up at the time it happens and you see the eclipse. The second way you see doesn't depend on time. Think of one of those visual puzzles, the page is just a bunch of lines, but when you look at it intently you suddenly see a picture pop into focus. The picture was there all the time in the lines on the page, you just were not seeing it.

In the same way see has two meanings, in the Greek language there are two word stems for the motion come. Jesus 'comes with the clouds'. If it is an event that happens at a certain time, the word in Greek would use the stem for a complete single action. But the word stem used here is for a continuing repeated action. The Greek says: 'Behold, he (continually repeatedly comes) with the clouds and every eye will see him and those who pierced him and will wail due to him all the tribes of the earth. Yes, Amen.'

So how do you make sense of this? Look at the old testament. The Holy Spirit, the Spirit of Glory, is seen as the cloud throughout the old testament. (see 1 Kings 8:10-11) Jesus went away in a cloud and Jesus came back in a cloud. Jesus went up to heaven in Acts 1 and Jesus came back in Acts 2 when the Holy Spirit was poured out on all flesh. Jesus went up to heaven in a visible cloud because visible is temporary, he wasn't going to be gone long, and Jesus came back in an unseen cloud, with the Holy Spirit,

because what is unseen is permanent, it is eternal. Jesus comes and will never leave.

Jesus comes to us with the Holy Spirit. God is one. The Holy Spirit can not come without Jesus also coming.

Jesus is repeatedly coming. He comes to each one of us individually. It's our sight being opened to see Jesus, that's what is now happening.

Look at John 16:13 in the Greek: when that one comes, the Spirit of Truth, he will guide you into all the truth, for he will not speak from himself but what ever he hears he will speak, and the coming he will announce to you.

The Holy Spirit announces Jesus' coming. It's the Holy Spirit who guides us to see that we are no longer orphans, that Jesus is with us, that Jesus is abiding in us. The Holy Spirit announces the coming – how Jesus comes and that Jesus has come. The Holy Spirit witnesses to us about Jesus. The Holy Spirit is reassuring us that Jesus has returned to be with us. Behold, I am with you always. (see Matthew 28:20)

Every eye will see him. Believers can see Jesus now. Jesus reveals himself to us. (see John 14:15-24). Those who refuse to see Jesus during their life, will die and then stand before Jesus throne and see him then.

There is a fascinating parallel passage in Luke at the end of the sermon on the mount. 'Everyone coming to me and hearing of me the words, and doing them, I will show you to whom he is like: he is like a man building a house, who dug and deepened, and laid a foundation on the rock, and a flood happening burst the stream against that house and not could shake it, for it had been founded on the rock.' (Luke 6:47-48) It is the same Greek word stem for continually coming. 'Everyone (continually repeatedly coming) to me

and hearing of me the words and doing them' – that is the man whose house can not be shaken.

Can not be shaken means can not die. Our body is our house. We are the house of God. A man whose house can not be shaken means a man who can not die.

I'm going away but I will come again. I won't leave you orphans. (see John 14:18) When does Jesus come to us? At baptism. When does the Father and Son come to us? If you obey my words, we will love you and we will come and dine with you and make our home with you. (see John 14:15-24). They aren't waiting to come. They are knocking on the door having arrived.

God is with us. Jesus is walking among the candlesticks, the churches, on earth today. (see 1 Corinthians 6:17, Revelation 1:10-20, Revelation 2, Revelation 3)

My project results – part 6 continued

When is the last day?

We speak about a condemned prisoner's last meal. Or that a dying man's last day was peaceful with his family at his bedside. We say that a man was laid to rest as his funeral because he is no longer busy with the affairs of life. The last day is the last day of your life.

The last day is the day you die. For Jesus, it is the cross. For us, the day we die is the day we are baptized. The last day is the last day of your life as a first Adam man.

I have descended from heaven that I may do the will of the one sending me. And this is the will of the Father having sent me, that all which he has given me, I shall not lose of it, but shall raise up it in the last day. And this is the will of the one sending me that everyone seeing the son and believing in him should have life everlasting, and I will raise him up at the last day. (John 6:38-40)

Jesus defines the last day by what he does on it. Jesus raises us up.

The women came to the tomb. Two men stood by them in shining clothing. Why seek you the living one among the dead ones? Jesus is not here, but was raised. Remember how he spoke to you, yet being in Galilee, saying that the son of man must be delivered into the hands of sinful men and to be crucified and the third day to rise again. (Luke 24:4b-7)

When did Jesus rise? On the third day. (see Luke 24:4b-7)
When does Jesus raise us up? The last day. (see John 6:38-40)

We are raised with Christ. (see Ephesians 2:1-10)

We are raised (resurrected) with Jesus in baptism (see Colossians 2:12)

Jesus defines his last day as the 3rd day - the day he rises. Jesus defines our last day as the day he raises us. We are raised in baptism.

We are raised by Jesus in AD 33. At baptism it becomes our experience, we have what Jesus did for us. Our baptism is us joining Jesus in both his baptism in water, his death on the cross, and in his being raised from the dead. God makes us alive with Christ.

We die in baptism. We are made alive with Christ. We never die again. For us time is now eternal. It has no ending. The day of our death is in the rear view mirror. It is called the last day because it is the day in which time ceases to have an ending. We now live in eternal, lasting forever time that doesn't have a beginning or an ending.

God speaks of ages. Think of an age as being a way God relates to man during that period. There was the age of Adam in Eden. The age of wicked men until Noah's flood. The age of Abraham. The age of Israel ruled by judges. The age of Israel ruled by kings. The age of the Messiah, Jesus of earth before the cross. The age of the church. The age all creation shows its glory.

✱

What does it mean to rise up? It's like sitting on a stool and then standing. To rise up is the act of standing up.

In baptism we are crucified with Christ, we died, we are buried, we are raised with Christ, and we are seated with Christ. (see Ephesians 2:1-10)

The Father said to Jesus – sit here beside me while I put all your enemies under your feet.

Like Jesus, after we are raised from the dead, at first we are seated with Christ beside the father while God puts all our enemies under our feet. We start out sitting, not standing.

We have been set free of sin and death, we have been set free of the sin nature, we have been set free of corruption. But we are infants, we are learning how to walk with the spirit and be who we now are, sons of God. So we sit with God the Father in Christ, learning, being taught by God.

Jesus goes before us. Is Jesus now seated or standing? He's standing. He stands up when God has defeated all his enemies. The last enemy defeated was death. God raised Jesus from the grave defeating death. The last enemy was placed under Jesus feet in AD 33. We see Jesus standing in Act 7:55 and in Revelation 1:12-20.

Jesus tells us to rise, to stand up. How do we do that? We see Jesus is standing and so we stand up too. We stop being seated with Christ waiting for our enemies to be put under our feet. We see that God has put all our enemies under our feet because we are in Christ. We see we have God's nature, we are righteous. We see death is defeated and we have life. That is the change we make. When we see all our enemies are defeated, the last one being death, we stand up. We literally stand up every morning and keep living. There is no more death in us. We stand up. We rise. Every morning.

My project results – part 6 continued

We misunderstand time. Jesus is the beginning and the end. (see Revelation 1:8) When Jesus is present you have both the beginning of things and the end of things present at the same time.

Time is like a 180 degree view. We can see on the left the beginning and the right the end. We can choose where we want to stand by how much we see has happened. Jews today who are still waiting for the Messiah to come, they aren't seeing Jesus. The world thinking there is no God who judges them, they don't see that they are being consumed with fire, being destroyed, that within 120 years they will be no more. A Christian thinking they die and go to heaven and then get a new body miss seeing they have that new body now.

You can choose to move all the way to the end and stand there. That is what God is offering you. Have everything now. Jesus is with you. Jesus is the end. Stand up. Rise. Enjoy life lasting forever.

now, at the completion of the ages, for putting away of sin through the sacrifice of himself, Jesus has been revealed. (see Hebrews 9:26)

This is the completion of the ages. All God wants to do with and for mankind is wrapped up in what Jesus does for us in AD 33 at the cross. The word of the cross is the power of salvation for those who believe. Having righteousness and life is a matter of seeing what has already been done.

When is the last trumpet?

We are changed in a moment of time at the last trumpet.
(see 1 Corinthians 15:52)

The last trumpet is the 7th trumpet. (see Revelation 8:6)
When the 7th trumpet sounds time will be no more. (see
Revelation 10:5-7)

The 7th trumpet sounds and heaven celebrates the fact God
has taken his place and is reigning. (see Revelation 11:15-
19) Jesus has died, Jesus has risen, Jesus is reigning. The
last day has happened. The 7th trumpet has been blown.
Jesus is King of Kings and Lord of Lords. The end has
come. Behold, I make all things new. Write, it is done. (see
Revelation 21)

Remember a day is like a thousand years and a thousand
years like a day. (see 2 Peter 3:8)

Some haven't heard the trumpet yet, they don't see Jesus
saves them.

Some hear the trumpet after they sleep, they hear it and
wake up in heaven and see they were changed, that it
happened at their baptism.

Some hear the trumpet sounding on earth and will never
sleep because they see they have already been changed.

He who has ears to hear, let him hear. We can hear the 7th
trumpet sounding. We stand at the end by seeing it is done.

How does the world end? By everyone seeing Jesus. We
manifest the life of Christ when we live and continue
living. After so many years of us living and not dying no
one on earth will be able to say they don't see Jesus. They
will see Jesus living in us.

Any Christian can abide in the word, see the truth, find the kingdom and his righteous, find life, and be the light of the world. We live. That is our light. That is what the world sees. We are righteous, we do what is right, and we live, giving thanks to God who gave us all things with Jesus. There isn't something else God needs to do to bring about the new heavens and new earth. Jesus has come. We need to see what that means and live it so others in the world can see Jesus, the Son of the living God, who is abiding in us and us in him. All will know God. Our God is the God who gives righteousness and life.

*

What did God most want me to know? God will explain scripture to me. God is no respecter of persons. He gives truth to anyone who asks him. It is a profound question: God, what is it you most wish I knew today? Anyone can ask it and listen to God answer that question.

Why I wrote this book

How beautiful upon the mountains
are the feet of him who brings good tidings,
who publishes peace,
who brings good tidings of good,
who publishes salvation,
who says to Zion, "Your God reigns."
Isaiah 52:7 (RSV)

AN EXCERPT FROM THE NOVEL IMMORTALITY

[You are joining a conversation in progress between Chemistry Professor Emily Worth and Theology Professor Noah Shepherd as they walk on campus. Emily is a new Christian. Prior to this point in the story Emily has been visiting Noah's office to ask questions she has about God.]

Emily glanced his way with a brief smile. "Why did you really come to find me tonight, Noah?"

She was shutting down this conversation going toward her recent personal past and he could understand that. "That obvious?"

"You don't strike me as the wander by kind of guy. You were thinking about something and came to track me down."

He considered how he wanted to ask this. "What would you consider the hardest question you have?"

"Why do you ask?"

"You brought it with you this morning, but decided not to mention it." Her expression told him that remark had hit solid ground. "You don't have to discuss it now, but I find it fascinating that for most of my afternoon the Holy Spirit has been giving a steady nudge inside that you didn't mention the question you think about the most. It must be important to you, which is why it matters to God. He's been persistent with me today for a reason."

"It's simply a puzzle I've been trying to work out, more than a question. But I have been thinking about it for quite awhile."

"Your choice, talk about it tonight, or another day?"

"I'm not sure how you'll take it."

"Try me and find out," he offered.

"There is a verse in second Timothy that says Jesus 'abolished death and brought life and immortality to light through the gospel.' It's 2 Timothy 1:10b. It's a past tense statement. Jesus abolished death."

Noah nodded. "Young's Literal Translation of the

Greek phrase reads: ‘our Saviour Jesus Christ, who indeed did abolish death, and did enlighten life and immortality through the good news’.”

“You know the verse.”

“Very well. It’s one of the most beautiful treasures in all of scripture.”

“I read that verse and it leads me to ask another question. Why do Christians die? It’s illogical that we do. It’s appointed to man once to die, then the judgment. But Christians have already died and passed out of judgment.”

Noah glanced over at her in surprise, not expecting to hear her make that connection. A relatively young Christian realizing the contradiction and proposing the question certainly got his attention.

“Stupid question?”

“On the contrary. It’s an elegant and important one,” he replied. She was trying to sort out three passages. Noah quoted them to confirm they were talking about the same specifics.

it is appointed for men to die once, and after that comes judgment Hebrews 9:27b RSV

Do you not know that all of us who have been baptized into Christ Jesus were baptized into his death? We were buried therefore with him by baptism into death, so that as Christ was raised from the dead by the glory of the Father, we too might walk in newness of life. Romans 6:3-4 RSV

Jesus said... “Truly, truly, I say to you, he who hears my word and believes him who sent me, has eternal life; he does not come into judgment, but has passed from death to life.” John 5:24 RSV

Emily nodded. “That’s my puzzle.”

“It’s a fascinating one,” Noah agreed.

“Is there an answer?”

There was something special going on in how she was thinking, how she was curious. The Holy Spirit was illuminating key connections in scripture for her. Mary, the sister of Lazarus, had been able to perceive Jesus was about to die and had poured expensive perfume out to anoint him for his coming burial. It felt like Emily was listening to the Holy Spirit in the same way. Noah considered how to answer and chose to keep his reply simple. "There is no death in God."

"Why do I get the feeling there are a few more paragraphs behind that brief sentence?"

He smiled. "I know this topic well. The study is a useful one. Answering it forces you to think about important subtopics, like mankind's fall into sin, salvation, resurrection, baptism, life. Your puzzle has a simple answer. But it's counter-intuitive."

"I like hearing there is a way to answer this. I don't mind studying, wondering about questions and talking about them with the Holy Spirit. But it would help to know how to figure this out. I don't want to think as long and as hard as you have Noah."

He smiled at her mild protest. "When a chemistry student asks an important question that is beyond their present year of study, how do you answer them? Do you avoid confusing them, or do you present the answer that may require them to grasp concepts that are of a more advanced level in order to understand your answer?"

"If they were able to figure out the question to ask, I assume they are ready for the answer, no matter how advanced it needs to be. I give the roadmap as best I can from where they are to what they have asked and let them study their way to understanding my answer. It's always easier to swim to a destination, to run a race to a finish line. They are showing me with the question they are ready to think beyond their present year of study."

"You need to be like a child to answer your puzzle, Emily. Rather than need to grasp something more advanced than where you are, you need to be able to grasp something

simpler.

“There is a verse in Proverbs that says ‘It is the glory of God to conceal things, but the glory of Kings is to search things out.’ Proverbs 25:2. God has filled his word with treasures for us and those who abide in the word find them routinely, like pearls of great price. They are concealed because God wants you to desire them, search them out and then be delighted with your discoveries. Your puzzle is one of those treasures. Why do Christians die? It is indeed illogical. The Holy Spirit will build an answer for you over time, like a master builder upon a foundation, if you want to put in the effort and time and let Him. Just ask Him ‘where should I read today?’ and see if a book and chapter comes to mind.”

“He likes to take me on scavenger hunts,” Emily mentioned, “offering the suggestion of a word I should follow through the bible, reading every passage where it appears. Those journeys inevitably take interesting detours.”

“I’m glad you’re willing to follow those suggestions. You’re learning to hear his voice and recognize it,” Noah replied.

“I’m doing my best. He’s a very creative teacher; I love that about Him.” She glanced over. “Can I bounce what I’m thinking off you so you can steer me away from any ditch?”

“Sure.”

“I think we’ve misunderstood the definition of the word eternal,” Emily offered. “Eternal means always, so eternal means now. God is eternal.”

She looked his way and he simply nodded his agreement. “You’re defining it correctly.”

“Jesus says he is the life. We always have Jesus abiding in us. So therefore we have eternal life. It’s literal. Eternal life has already begun. It isn’t something which begins at some time in the future. Jesus is the mechanism, the how, for this gift of eternal life. It’s his presence in us. The moment we receive Jesus as our Savior we have

received eternal life.”

Noah would have given her an A had she handed him only that paragraph as her entire final thesis. She’d already found the key to her puzzle. “Eternal life is something we have now,” he agreed. “The verb tense God uses is present tense rather than future. The passage you want is in 1 John 5,” he offered and quoted it:

He who does not believe God has made him a liar, because he has not believed in the testimony that God has borne to his Son. And this is the testimony, that God gave us eternal life, and this life is in his Son. He who has the Son has life; he who has not the Son of God has not life. I [John] write this to you who believe in the name of the Son of God, that you may know that you have eternal life. 1 John 5:10b-13 RSV

“Oh, that’s perfect!” Emily pulled out her phone to note down the reference.

Noah didn’t offer another comment, just walked with her enjoying her delight, letting her think after she pocketed her phone. They were coming to the stadium and Noah detoured them toward the side gate for which he had keys. He liked to walk the track and sit in the stadium seats of an evening and watch the first stars appear, to pray for the athletes who spent hours on the field and on the track training as well as the students who would fill the stadium seats to watch them compete.

Emily finished her water bottle and tossed it into a recycling bin beside a trash barrel. “Life and death are contradictory. No matter how many times I circle my question, why do Christians die? it comes back to the fact these are irreconcilable. God has given us eternal life. And eternal means always, means now. So its death which is the illogical fact. What am I not seeing, Noah?”

“You’re already seeing it.”

As they stepped onto the track to walk its circuit, Noah took a risk and answered Emily’s puzzle, putting into

words the one step she wasn't yet taking. She wasn't yet willing to trust the truth she had seen when it produced a radically different answer than expected.

"Death is not part of a Christian's life. Eternal life is not a future event. It's a tangible reality within us right now. Jesus is the life. Jesus abides in us. There is no death in life. Jesus has abolished death and brought to light life and immortality in the good news. 2 Timothy 1:10b isn't complicated. A child understands when you abolish death, you have life, and life that never ends is immortality.

"Christians die only because no one has told them they don't need to die. It's like healing, Emily. Christians are only sick because no one has told them they are healed. God has given us eternal life. That life is ours now. It's already begun. Jesus has abolished death. By his wounds we have been healed. What we've been hoping for is already finished for us. It's already ours. God has given us all things pertaining to life and godliness through the knowledge of His Son Jesus. Past tense given.

"It is appointed for men to die once and after that comes judgment. That's true. And we've already died. It wasn't just words, in baptism it was a true death. We've experienced our one death when we were crucified with Jesus. We've been buried. We've been resurrected from the dead. Once means only once. Our one death is in the rear view mirror. We have already passed from death to life. We do not come into judgment because Jesus came into judgment in our place. We have fulfilled this verse – we have died and been judged – Jesus simply stepped in and took the judgment due us upon himself. God poured out love and grace upon us through Jesus and perfectly saved us. It's finished. Our sins are gone. Judgment is over. We have put on Christ and there is no death in God. Death is not part of a Christian's life. We have eternal life now."

Noah watched Emily absorb that answer. She simply smiled when she had it. "Okay. You were willing to say what I was only willing to look at and puzzle over. It is a beautifully elegant answer. Thank you."

Jesus
the Truth and the Life

Dee Henderson

© copyright 2020 by Dee Henderson. All rights reserved.

Permission is granted to copy any pages of this book for personal use and/or bible study or classroom handout, but not for resale.

Permission is granted for portions of this text to be inserted into another publication so long as they are quoted as written and the author, title and pages are indicated as their source.

All other rights are reserved. No part of this publication may be reproduced, stored in retrieval system, or transmitted in any form or by any means – for example, electronic, photocopy, recording – without the express written permission of the publisher.

Contact the author/publisher:

Dee Henderson
dee@deehenderson.com
www.deehenderson.com

current printing revision: May 1, 2021

INT: Scripture quotations marked INT are taken from the Interlinear Hebrew-Greek-English Bible, Jay P. Green, Sr. General Editor and Translator, copyright © 1976, 1977, 1980, 1981, 1984, 1985 by Jay Green Sr.

KJV: Scripture quotations marked KJV are taken from the King James Version of the bible.

Scriptures not marked by source are from the King James Version (KJV) or the Greek and Hebrew of the Interlinear Hebrew-Greek-English Bible (INT) as worded or punctuated by the author.

This book in one sentence:

God has given us life in the kingdom of God.

*

A note from the author:

I am single in a society where most are married;
charismatic in a church which is not; rich in a world that is
poor. We may not have much in common on the surface,
but what we do share is a heavenly Father who loves us, for
God made us all in his image.

You are my family through Jesus. I love you from all my
heart. I desire God's blessings for you, his grace and his
love.

So I offer the following scriptures and brief remarks for
your consideration regarding life in the kingdom of God.

*

*

I [Jesus] say to you, he that believes on me **has** everlasting life.

from John chapter 6

A note from the author:

I was in my 50's before I read this scripture and realized it said **has**, not **will have** in the future.

The good news is not that we die and go to heaven and then live forever. The good news is that we have life forever now on earth, from the day we are baptized into Jesus.

This is where hearing **has**, instead of will have, led me.

There was a man of the Pharisees, named Nicodemus, who came to Jesus by night, and said to him, Rabbi, we know that you are a teacher come from God: for no man can do these miracles that you do, except God be with him.

Jesus answered and said to him, Truly, truly, I say to you, except a man be born again, he cannot see the kingdom of God.

Nicodemus said to him, How can a man be born when he is old? can he enter the second time into his mother's womb, and be born?

Jesus answered, Truly, truly, I say to you, except a man be born of water and of the Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God. That which is born of the flesh is flesh; and that which is born of the Spirit is spirit.

Nicodemus answered and said to him, How can these things be?

Jesus said to him, As Moses lifted up the serpent in the wilderness, even so must the Son of man be lifted up, that whoever believes in him should not die, but have eternal life.

For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whoever believes in him should not die, but have everlasting life.

excerpts from John chapter 3

A note from the author:

“except a man be born of water and of the Spirit” is a reference to baptism.

“the Son of man be lifted up” is a reference to Jesus being lifted up on the cross.

We receive spiritual life when we are baptized, for that which is born of the Spirit is spirit.

Jesus said to his disciples, It is the spirit that quickens; the flesh profits nothing: the words that I speak to you, they are spirit, and they are life.

from John chapter 6

To be carnally minded is death; but to be spiritually minded is life and peace.

If any man has not the Spirit of Christ, he is none of his.

But if the Spirit of him that raised up Jesus from the dead dwells in you, he that raised up Christ from the dead shall also quicken your mortal bodies by his Spirit that dwells in you.

from Romans chapter 8

A note from the author:

We receive physical life from the Spirit dwelling in us, quickening our mortal bodies. (quicken means to make alive: revive: to cause to be enlivened).

A note from the author:

These scriptures changed what I understood the good news to be.

I have everlasting life. That life is spiritual life and physical life. It begins the day I was baptized.

Everlasting means lasting forever. There is no point in time at which I will not have life. Therefore, I will never die.

The good news is that we have life forever now on earth, from the day we are baptized into Jesus.

And now why do you wait? Arise, and be baptized, and wash away your sins, calling on the name of the Lord.

from Acts chapter 22

Peter said to them, Repent, and be baptized every one of you in the name of Jesus Christ for the remission of sins, and you shall receive the gift of the Holy Spirit. For the promise is to you, and to your children, and to all that are afar off, even as many as the LORD our God shall call.

from Acts chapters 2

If we confess our sins, he is faithful and just to forgive us our sins, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness.

from 1 John chapter 1

You know that Jesus was manifested to take away our sins; and in him is no sin.

from 1 John chapter 3

this is the promise that he has promised us, even eternal life.

from 1 John chapter 2

A note from the author:

Because Adam sinned, he died.

Sin entered the world and death followed.

These scriptures show me that if I repent and am baptized, that I am forgiven all my sins and cleansed from all my unrighteousness, that I am righteous and without sin.

Righteousness is a free gift from God through Jesus. It isn't partial righteousness. I am made completely clean. Free of sin, I am no longer condemned to death. Therefore, I will never die.

I receive the gift of righteousness at baptism. And righteousness is how God gives me everlasting life. This is God's promise to me, which he fulfilled through Jesus.

From a different direction, from scriptures on righteousness, I reached the same conclusion as I did in the opening pages. The good news is that I now have life forever on earth, beginning from the day I was baptized into Jesus.

After the resurrection, Jesus appears to his apostles in the upper room. Luke records this:

As they thus spoke, Jesus himself stood in the midst of them, and said to them, Peace be unto you.

But they were terrified and afraid, and supposed that they had seen a spirit.

And he said to them, Why are you troubled? and why do thoughts arise in your hearts? Behold my hands and my feet, that it is I myself: handle me, and see; for a spirit has not flesh and bones, as you see me have. And when he had thus spoken, he showed them his hands and his feet.

And while they yet believed not for joy, and wondered, he said to them, Have you here any food? And they gave him a piece of a broiled fish, and of an honeycomb. And he took it, and did eat before them.

from Luke chapter 24

For you are all the children of God by faith in Christ Jesus. For as many of you as have been baptized into Christ have put on Christ.

from Galatians chapter 3

A note from the author:

The Webster's dictionary definition for put on:

put on: to dress oneself in: don

Jesus has incorruptible flesh and bone. Acts 2 says his body did not see corruption even in the tomb.

A child of God is dressed in Jesus. In baptism, we are born spirit and we are dressed in God's flesh and bone.

In the old testament, Isaiah writes:

I will greatly rejoice in the Lord, my soul shall be joyful in my God; for he has clothed me with the garments of salvation, he has covered me with the robe of righteousness, as a bridegroom decks himself with ornaments, and as a bride adorns herself with her jewels.

For as the earth brings forth her bud, and as the garden causes the things that are sown in it to spring forth; so the Lord God will cause righteousness and praise to spring forth before all the nations.

from Isaiah chapter 61

Every good gift and every perfect gift is from above, and comes down from the Father of lights, with whom is no variableness, neither shadow of turning.

Of his own will he gave birth to us with the word of truth, that we should be a kind of first fruits of his creatures.

from James chapter 1

A note from the author:

God has given birth to us in baptism. We are changed, we are made new. We are no longer a man, born of Adam, born out of earth, we are now a child of God, born from above, having been born of God. Birth is an event, it is not a process.

There was a certain nobleman, whose son was sick at Capernaum. When he heard that Jesus was come out of Judea into Galilee, he went to him, and besought him that he would come down and heal his son, for he was at the point of death.

Then said Jesus to him, Except you see signs and wonders, you will not believe.

The nobleman said to him, Sir, come down that my child not die.

Jesus said to him, Go your way; your son lives.

And the man believed the word that Jesus had spoken to him, and he went his way. And as he was now going down, his servants met him, and told him, saying, Your son lives.

Then he inquired of them the hour when his son began to mend. And they said to him, Yesterday at the seventh hour the fever left him. So the father knew that it was at the same hour in which Jesus said to him, Your son lives: and himself believed, and his whole house.

This is again the second miracle that Jesus did, when he was come out of Judea into Galilee.

from John chapter 4

A note from the author:

I see two lessons. Jesus gives life by speaking. And that life heals sickness.

When I saw in the scriptures that I now have everlasting life, it was Jesus who opened my eyes. I saw what I had not seen before, I heard what I had not understood before. Jesus gave me life by speaking to me. And I received that life by believing Jesus.

And blessed is she that believed: for there shall be a performance of those things which were told her from the Lord.

from Luke chapter 1

Now there is at Jerusalem by the sheep market a pool, having five porches. And a certain man was there, which had an infirmity thirty and eight years.

When Jesus saw him lying there, and knew that he had been a long time in that case, he said to him, Do you will to be made whole? Rise, take up your bed, and walk.

And immediately the man was made whole, and took up his bed, and walked.

And on the same day was the Sabbath, the Jews, therefore, said to him that was cured, It is the Sabbath day, it is not lawful for you to carry your bed.

He answered them, He that made me whole, the same said to me, Take up your bed, and walk.

Then asked they him, Who said to you, Take up your bed, and walk?

And he that was healed knew not who it was, for Jesus had went away, a multitude being in that place.

Afterward Jesus found him in the temple, and said to him, Behold, you are made whole; sin no more, lest a worse thing come to you.

The man departed and told the Jews that it was Jesus, which had made him whole.

excerpts from John chapter 5

A note from the author:

I see a simple lesson. I receive healing by obeying Jesus.

I see a more difficult lesson. Jesus expects me to sin no more. Jesus will not ask me to do something which is not possible for me to do. Ceasing to sin is not only possible, Jesus requires it. (There are more scriptures coming on this point shortly.)

And it came to pass, as Jesus went to Jerusalem, that he passed through the midst of Samaria and Galilee.

And as he entered into a certain village, there met him ten men that were lepers, which stood afar off: And they lifted up their voices, and said, Jesus, Master, have mercy on us.

And when he saw them, he said to them, Go show yourselves to the priests. And it came to pass, that, as they went, they were cleansed.

And one of them, when he saw that he was healed, turned back, and with a loud voice glorified God, and fell down on his face at his feet, giving him thanks: and he was a Samaritan.

And Jesus answering said, Were there not ten cleansed? but where are the nine? There are not found that returned to give glory to God, save this stranger.

And he said to him, Arise, go your way: your faith has made you whole.

from Luke chapter 17

And it came to pass, that as Jesus was come near to Jericho, a certain blind man sat by the way side begging. And hearing the multitude pass by, he asked what it meant. And they told him, that Jesus of Nazareth passes by. And he cried, saying, Jesus, thou son of David, have mercy on me.

And they which went before rebuked him, that he should hold his peace: but he cried so much the more, Thou son of David, have mercy on me.

And Jesus stood, and commanded him to be brought to him: and when he was come near, he asked him, saying, What wilt thou that I shall do unto you?

And he said, Lord, that I may receive my sight.

And Jesus said to him, Receive thy sight: thy faith has saved thee.

And immediately he received his sight, and followed him, glorifying God: and all the people, when they saw it, gave praise to God.

from Luke chapter 18

A note from the author:

What exactly was the blind man's faith?

He called Jesus the son of David. He called Jesus the Messiah, the Christ. He believed Jesus was the person the old testament had written about, and he knew the scriptures wrote that the Messiah would give sight to the blind. From these two things which he knew and believed, he boldly asked to receive his sight. And he immediately received what he asked.

Faith is the combination of knowledge of the scriptures, with belief that Jesus is the one scripture writes about; Jesus has come as the Christ to fulfill the scriptures.

Do you notice Jesus asked the man to speak his faith before he healed him? Jesus was modeling how the kingdom of God operates. Ask and you will receive.

Knowing who I am, believing I am the Christ, ask me for what the scriptures say I will do, and I will do it for you.

And Jesus spoke a parable to them to this end, that men ought always to pray, and not to faint, saying, There was in a city a judge, which feared not God, neither regarded man: and there was a widow in that city; and she came unto him, saying, Avenge me of mine adversary.

And he would not for awhile: but afterward he said within himself, Though I fear not God, nor regard man; yet because this widow troubles me, I will avenge her, lest by her continual coming she weary me.

And the Lord said, Hear what the unjust judge said. And shall not God avenge his own elect, which cry day and night to him, though he bear long with them? I tell you that he will avenge them speedily. Nevertheless when the Son of man comes, shall he find faith on the earth?

from Luke chapter 18

And Jesus spoke this parable to certain which trusted in themselves that they were righteous, and despised others: two men went up into the temple to pray; the one a Pharisee, and the other a publican.

The Pharisee stood and prayed thus with himself, God, I thank you, that I am not as other men are, extortioners, unjust, adulterers, or even as this publican. I fast twice in the week, I give tithes of all that I possess.

And the publican, standing afar off, would not lift up so much as his eyes to heaven, but smote upon his breast, saying, God be merciful to me a sinner.

I tell you, this man went down to his house justified rather than the other: for every one that exalts himself shall be abased; and he that humbles himself shall be exalted.

from Luke chapter 18

A note from the author:

What does it mean to be exalted? As least part of the answer is in this passage. Exalted means to be justified. And justified means to be made righteous. To be exalted is to be made righteous. We are made righteous, without sin, in baptism. We are exalted when we are baptized.

The Pharisee thought it was his works which made him righteous. He was proud, he did not think he needed God's mercy, he thought his own works were sufficient proof he was righteous. In his pride he ignored the fact that the law said to transgress any part of the law was to transgress it all. The Pharisee ignored the fact he had committed one or more sins in his lifetime, and was thus as guilty in God's eyes, being a sinner, as the publican.

The publican understood it was God's mercy which made him righteous. He humbled himself by seeing himself as a sinner who could only be made righteous by God's mercy resting upon him.

The Pharisee came to the temple, spoke to God, and declared himself righteous. He left still a sinner. The publican came to the temple, admitted he had sinned, cried to God for mercy, and was forgiven. He left the temple clean of sin, made righteous.

Jesus said,

the Father loves the Son, and shows him all things that himself does, and he will show him greater works than these, that you may marvel. For as the Father raises up the dead, and quickens them, even so the Son quickens whom he will.

For the Father judges no man, but has committed all judgment to the Son, that all men should honor the Son, even as they honor the Father. He that honors not the Son, honors not the Father which has sent him.

Truly, truly, I say to you, He that hears my word, and believes on him that sent me, has everlasting life, and shall not come into condemnation, but is passed out of death to life.

Truly, truly, I say to you, The hour is coming, **and now is**, when the dead shall hear the voice of the Son of God, and they that hear shall live. For as the Father has life in himself; so has he given to the Son to have life in himself, and has given him authority to execute judgment also, because he is the Son of man.

from John chapter 5

Jesus said to them, When you have lifted up the Son of man, then shall you know that I am he, and I do nothing of myself; but as my Father has taught me, I speak these things. And he that sent me is with me. The Father has not left me alone, for I do always those things that please him.

As he spoke these words, many believed on him.

from John chapter 8

A note from the author:

The dead shall hear the voice of the Son of God, and they that hear shall live. This is the good news in one sentence.

There is a death sentence resting upon sinners. When a man comes to Jesus, repents and is baptized, he is forgiven his sins and made clean. He is no longer a sinner condemned to death. Now he is righteous and has everlasting life.

The good news in three words: hear and live.

Jesus said to the Jews,

the works which the Father has given me to finish, the same works that I do, bear witness of me, that the Father has sent me. And the Father himself, which has sent me, has borne witness of me.

You have not his word abiding in you, for whom he has sent, him you do not believe.

I am come in my Father's name, and you receive me not. If another shall come in his own name, him you will receive. How can you believe, which receive honor one of another, and seek not the honor that comes only from God?

Do not think that I will accuse you to the Father, there is one that accuses you, even Moses, in whom you trust. For had you believed Moses, you would have believed me; for he wrote of me.

excerpts from John chapter 5

And Moses spoke these words to all Israel:

the Lord your God will circumcise your heart, and the heart of your seed, to love the Lord your God with all your heart, and with all your soul, that you may live. And you shall return and obey the voice of the Lord.

See, I have set before you this day life and good, and death and evil; In that I command you this day to love the Lord your God, to walk in his ways, and to keep his commandments,

I call heaven and earth to record this day against you, that I have set before you life and death, blessing and cursing: **therefore choose life**, that both you and your seed may live, that you may love the Lord your God, and that you may obey his voice, and that you may cleave unto him: for he is your life and the length of your days,

excerpts from Deuteronomy chapter 30

Jesus said,

I am the way, the truth, and **the life**: no man comes to the Father, but by me.

from John 14

And I will pray the Father, and he shall give you another Comforter, that he may abide with you for ever; even the Spirit of truth; whom the world cannot receive, because it sees him not, neither knows him: but you know him; for he dwells with you, and shall be in you.

from John 14

Jesus answered ... to this end was I born, and for this cause I came into the world, that I should bear witness to the truth. Every one that is of the truth hears my voice.

from John 18

Then said Jesus to those Jews which believed on him, If you continue in my word, then you are my disciples indeed; and you shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free.

from John chapter 8

A note from the author:

Through Moses, God gave his people the law.

If his people obeyed the law, they would receive good, blessings and life to replace evil, curses and death. This was the first covenant.

The people didn't obey the law.

So God sent Jesus. Jesus came and kept the law perfectly. Jesus received good, blessings and life from God.

God set aside the first covenant and made a new covenant with his people. Rather than fulfill the law ourselves, we could now receive grace and be saved by what Jesus did on our behalf. Our part would now be to believe Jesus is the Christ, the Savior of the world, and follow him.

God hasn't changed what he wants to do for his people. God just changed how he would accomplish what he desired to do.

God now gives us a choice. We can receive God's goodness, his blessings and everlasting life from Jesus; or we can reject Jesus and continue reaping evil, curses and death.

Moses told God's people: Choose life. Jesus tells us he is the life. So the deeper meaning of what Moses told God's people is: Choose Jesus.

God tells us the same. This is my Son, hear him.

*

Listen very closely to Jesus in these next scriptures. It is the best news I have to share thus far.

And Jesus said to me [John], Do not seal the sayings of the prophecy of this book for the time is at hand.

He that is unjust, let him be unjust still: and he which is filthy, let him be filthy still: and he that is righteous, let him be righteous still: and he that is holy, let him be holy still.

And, behold, I come quickly; and my reward is with me, to give to every man according as his work shall be. I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end, the first and the last.

Blessed are they that do his commandments, that they may have right to the tree of life, and may enter in through the gates into the city.

For without are dogs, and sorcerers, and whoremongers, and murderers, and idolaters, and whosoever loves and makes a lie.

I, Jesus, have sent my angel to testify to you these things in the churches. I am the root and the offspring of David, and the bright and morning star.

And the Spirit and the bride say, Come. And let him that hears say, Come. And let him that is thirsty come. And whoever will, let him take the water of life freely.

For I testify to every man that hears the words of the prophecy of this book, if any man shall add unto these things, God shall add unto him the plagues that are written in this book: and if any man shall take away from the words of the book of this prophecy, God shall take away his part out of the book of life, and out of the holy city, and from the things which are written in this book.

He who testifies these things says, Surely I come quickly. Amen.

Even so, come, Lord Jesus.

from Revelation chapter 22

Whoever abides in the teachings of Christ, **has** both the Father and the Son.

from 2 John chapter 1

A note from the author:

Did you read this scripture and see it says **has**, not **will have** in the future?

Ask and you will receive.

We ask Jesus to come. He does. And the Father comes with him.

The good news is not that we are waiting for Jesus to come. The good news is that we can have the Father and the Son simply by asking them to come!

Abiding in the scriptures, listening to Jesus teach, hearing when the scripture says **has**, this truly matters.

Today on earth God has given us everlasting life. God has also given us Himself, Father and Son. And when the King has arrived, so has the kingdom of God.

*

I want to explore next what it means to be a child of God.

Jesus said,

the hour comes, **and now is**, when the true worshippers shall worship the Father in spirit and in truth, for the Father seeks such to worship him. God is a Spirit, and they that worship him must worship him in spirit and in truth.

The [Samaritan] woman said to him, I know that Messiah comes, which is called Christ; when he is come, he will tell us all things.

Jesus said to her, I that speak to you am he.

from John chapter 4

Whoever believes that Jesus is the Christ is born of God.

For whoever is born of God overcomes the world: and this is the victory that overcomes the world, even our faith.

And it is the Spirit that bears witness, because the Spirit is truth.

And this is the witness, that God has given to us eternal life, and this life is in his Son. He that has the Son has life; and he that has not the Son of God has not life.

We know that whoever is born of God does not sin; but he that is born of God keeps himself, and the wicked one does not touch him. And we know that we are of God, and the whole world lies in wickedness.

And we know that the Son of God is come, and has given us an understanding, that we may know him that is true, and we are in him that is true, even in his Son Jesus Christ.

from 1 John chapter 5

Whoever abides in Jesus does not sin, whoever sins has not seen him, nor known him.

Little children, let no man deceive you.

He that does righteousness is righteous, even as he is righteous.

He that commits sin is of the devil, for the devil has sinned from the beginning.

For this purpose the Son of God was manifested, that he might destroy the works of the devil.

Whoever is born of God does not commit sin, for his seed remains in him, and **he cannot sin, because he is born of God.**

In this the children of God are manifest, and the children of the devil.

excerpts from 1 John chapter 3

Beloved, do not follow who is evil, but who is good.

He doing good is out of God, but he doing evil has not seen God.

from 3 John

A note from the author:

Jesus said to the man he healed, Behold, you are made whole; sin no more, lest a worse thing come to you.

Ceasing to sin is not only possible, Jesus requires it. But do you see the scriptures on the prior two pages go well beyond an instruction to avoid sin, and to earnestly try not to sin? These scriptures say **does not sin**, and **cannot sin**.

God cannot sin because God is holy. God is perfect. God is righteous. There is no evil in God. To sin, God would have to cease being holy, perfect, and righteous. He cannot. We know from scripture that God the Father never changes. Neither does Jesus.

Pause for a moment and think about being born a child of God.

Everything in creation gives birth after its own kind. Elephants give birth to baby elephants. Sparrows give birth to sparrows. Lions give birth to baby lions. An elephant can't give birth to a sparrow even if it tries with all its might to do so. All of creation teaches us about God. It's why creation is ordered the way it is.

God can only give birth to Gods. This agrees with Psalm 82, where it is written, I have said Gods you are, and Sons of the Most High, all of you. (Jesus also quotes from this passage.)

We are born of God in baptism. He is our Father. He that is born of God cannot sin because a God cannot sin. When we abide in the word of God, Jesus teaches us we are no longer a man, or a son of man (a man who repents), but a son of God. Jesus shows us we are born with his own nature.

If you think you are a man, you will sin. If you think you are a sinner who repents, you will continually wrestle with sin, committing sin and confessing your sins, drawing on Jesus as your savior for forgiveness.

But if you see you are a son of God, born from above, you will know the truth and that truth will set you free. You are born righteous, holy and perfect. You cannot sin. You cannot change. You are like God because you are born of God. You will always do righteousness, because you are righteous. It's your new nature.

God's free gift to us is permanent righteousness through Jesus. To be as he is, forever. It is a spectacular gift which never tarnishes or fades. We are now children of God, born from above. We are no longer sinners. We are saints. We are holy, as God is holy.

We are born blind, not seeing the truth, but then God by his spirit opens our eyes. Abiding in the word produces righteous everlasting life. We see who we are by birth. We believe the scriptures. And we are empowered by God to live accordingly.

How shall we, that are dead to sin, live any longer in sin? Know you not, that so many of us as were baptized into Jesus Christ were baptized into his death? Therefore we are buried with him by baptism into death, that like as Christ was raised up from the dead by the glory of the Father, even so we also should walk in newness of life.

For if we have been planted together in the likeness of his death, we shall be also in the likeness of his resurrection. Knowing this, that our old man is crucified with him, that the body of sin might be destroyed, that henceforth we should not serve sin. For he that is dead is freed from sin.

Now if we be dead with Christ, we believe that we shall also live with him. Knowing that Christ being raised from the dead no more dies; death has no more dominion over him.

For in that he died, he died to sin once: but in that he lives, he lives to God. Likewise reckon you also yourselves to be dead indeed to sin, but alive to God through Jesus Christ our Lord.

Let not sin therefore reign in your mortal body, that you should obey the lusts of it. Neither yield you your members as instruments of unrighteousness to sin: but yield yourselves to God, as those that are alive from the dead, and your members as instruments of righteousness to God. For sin shall not have dominion over you: for you are not under the law, but under grace.

What then? shall we sin, because we are not under the law, but under grace? God forbid. Know you not, that to whom you yield yourselves servants to obey, his servants you are to whom you obey; whether of sin to death, or of obedience to righteousness?

But God be thanked, that you were the servants of sin, but you have obeyed from the heart that form of doctrine which was delivered you. Being then made free from sin, you became the servants of righteousness.

I speak after the manner of men because of the infirmity of your flesh: for as you have yielded your members servants to uncleanness and to iniquity unto iniquity; even so now yield your members servants to righteousness to holiness.

For when you were the servants of sin, you were free from righteousness. What fruit had you then in those things of which you are now ashamed? for the end of those things is death.

But now being made free from sin, and become servants to God, you have your fruit to holiness, and the end everlasting life. For the wages of sin is death; but the gift of God is eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord.

excerpts from Romans chapter 6

A note from the author:

The old man is crucified when we are baptized. The body of sin is destroyed. We are freed from sin.

Jesus sets us free from sin so we can live righteously. Ceasing to sin is not only possible, Jesus requires it. The Spirit is the one who teaches us about righteousness and leads us into the truth. We walk with the Spirit and abide in the word for it is the Spirit which quickens our life and reveals to us who we are.

*

I want to show you in the next few scriptures what Jesus says about those who persist in sin.

If we sin willfully after that we have received the knowledge of the truth, there remains no more sacrifice for sins, but a certain fearful expectation of judgment and fiery indignation, which shall devour the adversaries.

He that despised Moses' law died without mercy under two or three witnesses. Of how much more punishment, do you suppose, shall he be thought worthy, who has trodden under foot the Son of God, and has counted the blood of the covenant, wherewith he was sanctified, an unholy thing, and has despised the Spirit of grace? For we know him that has said, Vengeance belongs to me, I will repay, says the Lord. And again, The Lord shall judge his people.

It is a fearful thing to fall into the hands of the living God.

from Hebrews chapter 10

There are certain men ordained to condemnation, ungodly men, turning the grace of our God into unbridled lust, and denying the only Lord God and our Lord Jesus Christ.

I will therefore put in your remembrance, though you once knew this, how that the Lord, having saved the people out of the land of Egypt, afterward destroyed those that did not believe.

Even as Sodom and Gomorrah, and the cities about them in like manner, giving themselves over to fornication, and going after strange flesh, are set forth for an example, suffering the vengeance of eternal fire.

Likewise also these filthy dreamers defile the flesh, despise dominion, and speak evil of dignities. Woe unto them! for they have gone in the way of Cain, and ran greedily after the error of Balaam for reward, and perished in the gainsaying of Core.

These are spots in your feasts of charity, when they feast with you, feeding themselves without fear: they are clouds without water, carried about of winds; trees whose fruit withered, without fruit, twice dead, plucked up by the roots; raging waves of the sea, foaming out their own shame; wandering stars, to whom is reserved the blackness of darkness for ever.

And Enoch also, the seventh from Adam, prophesied of these, saying, Behold, the Lord comes with ten thousands of his saints, to execute judgment upon all, and to convince all that are ungodly among them of all their ungodly deeds which they have ungodly committed, and of all their hard speeches which ungodly sinners have spoken against him.

These are murmurers, complainers, walking after their own lusts; and their mouth speaks great swelling words, having men's persons in admiration to gain advantage.

Remember the words which were spoken before of the apostles of our Lord Jesus Christ; how that they told you there should be mockers in the last time, who should walk after their own ungodly lusts. These are those who separate themselves, sensual, the Spirit not having.

excerpts from Jude

Truly, Truly, I [Jesus] say to you, whoever commits sin is the servant of sin. And the servant abides not in the house forever: but the Son abides forever. If the Son therefore shall make you free, you shall be free indeed.

I know that you are Abraham's seed; but you seek to kill me, because my word has no place in you. I speak that which I have seen with my Father, and you do that which you have seen with your father.

The Jews answered and said to him, Abraham is our father.

Jesus said to them, If you were Abraham's children, you would do the works of Abraham. But now you seek to kill me, a man that has told you the truth, which I have heard of God, this did not Abraham. You do the deeds of your father.

Then said they to him, We be not born of fornication; we have one Father, even God.

Jesus said to them, If God were your Father, you would love me: for I proceeded forth and came from God; neither came I of myself, but he sent me. Why do you not understand my speech? even because you cannot hear my word.

You are out of your father the devil, and the lusts of your father you will do. He was a murderer from the beginning, and abode not in the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he speaks a lie, he speaks of his own, for he is a liar, and the father of it. And because I tell you the truth, you do not believe me.

Which of you convicts me of sin? And if I say the truth, why do you not believe me? He that is out of God hears God's words. You therefore do not hear them, because you are not out of God.

Then answered the Jews, and said to him, Say we not rightly that you are a Samaritan, and has a demon?

Jesus answered, I have not a demon; but I honor my Father, and you do dishonor me. And I seek not mine own glory: there is one that seeks and judges.

Truly, Truly, I say to you, if a man keeps my words, he shall never see death.

Then said the Jews to him, Now we know that you have a devil. Abraham is dead, and the prophets; and you say, if a man keeps my words, he shall never taste of death. Are you greater than our father Abraham, who is dead? and the prophets are dead: whom do you make yourself to be?

Jesus answered, If I honor myself, my honor is nothing, it is my Father that honors me; of whom you say, that he is your God. Yet you have not known him. But I know him and if I should say, I know him not, I shall be a liar like you. But I know him and keep his words. Your father Abraham rejoiced to see my day and he saw it and was glad.

Then said the Jews to him, You are not yet fifty years old and you have seen Abraham?

Jesus said to them, Truly, Truly, I say to you, before Abraham was, I am.

Then they took up stones to cast at him, but Jesus hid himself, and went out of the temple, going through the midst of them, and so passed by.

from John chapter 8

The Lord knows how to deliver the godly out of temptations, and to reserve the unjust to the day of judgment to be punished, chiefly those that walk after the flesh in the lust of uncleanness, and despise government.

These are presumptuous, self-willed...they speak evil of the things that they do not understand; and shall utterly perish in their own corruption and shall receive the reward of unrighteousness, as they that count it pleasure to riot in the day time. They are spots and blemishes, reveling in their own deceits while they feast with you, having eyes full of adultery, and not ceasing from sin.

They have exercised their heart with covetous practices; cursed children who have forsaken the right way, and are gone astray, following the way of Balaam the son of Bosor, who loved the wages of unrighteousness, but was rebuked for his iniquity.

These are wells without water, clouds that are carried with a tempest; to whom the blackest of darkness is reserved for ever. For when they speak great swelling words of vanity, they allure through the lusts of the flesh, through much wantonness, those that were clean, having escaped from them who live in error. While they promise them liberty, they themselves are the servants of corruption: for of whom a man is overcome, of the same is he brought in bondage.

For if after they have escaped the pollutions of the world through the knowledge of the Lord and Savior Jesus Christ, they are again entangled therein, and overcome, the latter end is worse with them than the beginning.

For it had been better for them not to have known the way of righteousness, than, after they have known it, to turn from the holy commandment delivered unto them.

But it is happened unto them according to the true proverb, The dog is turned to his own vomit again; and the sow that was washed to her wallowing in the mire.

excerpts from 2 Peter chapter 2

A note from the author:

I want to show you an overview of the gospel, both the salvation for believers and the judgment against the ungodly. The next 7 pages fit together into this single topic. It may feel at first as if I am mixing together different ideas as I draw from old and new testament scriptures. Stay with me, and I'll connect them together in the next author note.

I [Paul] am ready to preach the gospel to you that are at Rome also. For I am not ashamed of the gospel of Christ: for it is the power of God to salvation to every one that believes; to the Jew first, and also to the Greek.

For in the gospel the righteousness of God is revealed, as it is written, The just shall live by faith.

For the wrath of God is [also] revealed from heaven against all ungodliness and unrighteousness of men.

For the invisible things of him from the creation of the world are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, even his eternal power and Godhead; so that they are without excuse: because that, when they knew God, they glorified him not as God, neither were thankful; but became vain in their imaginations, and their foolish heart was darkened.

And even as they did not like to retain God in their knowledge, God gave them over to a reprobate mind, to do those things which are not good; being filled with all unrighteousness, fornication, wickedness, covetousness, maliciousness; full of envy, murder, debate, deceit, malignity; whisperers, backbiters, haters of God, spiteful, proud, boasters, inventors of evil things, disobedient to parents, without understanding, covenant breakers, without natural affection, implacable, unmerciful. Who knowing the judgment of God, that they which commit such things are worthy of death, not only do the same, but have pleasure in them that do them.

The judgment of God is according to truth against them which commit such things.

And thinks you this, O man, that judges them which do such things, and does the same, that you shall escape the judgment of God? Or despises you the riches of his goodness and forbearance and longsuffering, not knowing that the goodness of God leads you to repentance?

By your hardness and impenitent heart you treasure up to yourself wrath in the day of wrath and revelation of the righteous judgment of God;

who will render to every man according to his deeds:

to them who by patient continuance in well doing, seek for glory and honor and immortality, eternal life:

but unto them that are contentious, and do not obey the truth, but obey unrighteousness, indignation and wrath, tribulation and anguish, upon every soul of man that does evil, of the Jew first, and also of the Gentile;

but glory, honor, and peace, to every man that works good, to the Jew first, and also to the Gentile,

for there is no respect of persons with God.

excerpts from Romans chapters 1 and 2

And they came to John the Baptist, and said to him, Rabbi, he [Jesus] that was with you beyond Jordan, to whom you bore witness, behold, the same baptizes, and all men come to him.

John answered and said, A man can receive nothing, except it be given him from heaven. You yourselves bear me witness, that I said, I am not the Christ, but that I am sent before him.

He that has the bride is the bridegroom: but the friend of the bridegroom, which stands and hears him, rejoices greatly because of the bridegroom's voice: this my joy therefore is fulfilled. He must increase, but I must decrease.

He that comes from above is above all.

He that is of the earth is earthly, and speaks of the earth.

He that comes from heaven is above all. And what he hath seen and heard, that he testifies; and no man receives his testimony. He that has received his testimony has set to his seal that God is true.

For he whom God has sent speaks the words of God, for God gives not the Spirit by measure to him.

The Father loves the Son, and has given all things into his hand.

He that believes on the Son has everlasting life; and he that believes not the Son shall not see life, but the wrath of God abides on him.

from John chapter 3

David writes,

Our God shall come, and shall not keep silence: a fire shall devour before him, and it shall be very tempestuous round about him. He shall call to the heavens from above, and to the earth, that he may judge his people. Gather my saints together unto me; those that have made a covenant with me by sacrifice. And the heavens shall declare his righteousness, for God himself is judge.

from Psalm 50

The Lord tries the righteous, but the wicked and him that loves violence his soul hates. Upon the wicked he shall rain snares, fire and brimstone, and an horrible tempest: this shall be the portion of their cup.

from Psalm 11

Thy hand shall find out all your enemies, thy right hand shall find out those that hate you. You shall make them as a fiery oven in the time of your anger, the Lord shall swallow them up in his wrath, and the fire shall devour them. Their fruit you shall destroy from the earth, and their seed from among the children of men.

from Psalm 21

For the sin of their mouth and the words of their lips let them even be taken in their pride, and for cursing and lying which they speak. Consume them in wrath, consume them, that they may not be, and let them know that God rules in Jacob unto the ends of the earth.

from Psalm 59

David writes,

My soul is among lions, and I lie even among them that are set on fire, even the sons of men, whose teeth are spears and arrows, and their tongue a sharp sword.

The wicked are estranged from the womb: they go astray as soon as they be born, speaking lies. Their poison is like the poison of a serpent.

Break their teeth, O God, in their mouth. ... sweep them away.

The righteous shall rejoice when he sees the vengeance: he shall wash his feet in the blood of the wicked. So that a man shall say, Truly there is a reward for the righteous: truly he is a God that judges in the earth.

from Psalms 57 and 58

... in the end of this world, the Son of man shall send forth his angels, and they shall gather out of his kingdom all things that offend, and them which do iniquity; and shall cast them into a furnace of fire: there shall be wailing and gnashing of teeth.

Then shall the righteous shine forth as the sun in the kingdom of their Father.

He who has ears to hear, let him hear.

Again, the kingdom of heaven is like unto a net, that was cast into the sea, and gathered of every kind: which, when it was full, they drew to shore, and sat down, and gathered the good into vessels, but cast the bad away.

So shall it be at the end of the world: the angels shall come forth, and sever the wicked from among the just, and shall cast them into the furnace of fire: there shall be wailing and gnashing of teeth.

from Matthew chapter 13

And unto the angel of the church in Thyatira write; These things says the Son of God, who has his eyes like unto a flame of fire, and his feet are like fine brass;

I [Jesus] know thy works, and charity, and service, and faith, and thy patience, and thy works; and the last to be more than the first.

Notwithstanding I have a few things against you, because you suffer that woman Jezebel, which calls herself a prophetess, to teach and to seduce my servants to commit fornication, and to eat things sacrificed unto idols. And I gave her space to repent of her fornication, and she repented not.

Behold, I will cast her into a bed, and them that commit adultery with her into great tribulation, except they repent of their deeds. And I will kill her children with death;

And all the churches shall know that I am he who searches the kidneys and hearts: and I will give to every one of you according to your works.

from Revelation chapter 2

A note from the author:

I use to think the world is in darkness, we are waiting for Jesus to arrive, and then God will make all things right. These scriptures changed my perspective. They show there is an overlapping of kingdom life and God's wrath occurring now on earth.

John chapter 3 says, He that believes on the Son has everlasting life, he that believes not the Son, the wrath of God abides on him.

Do you see this is also another **have now** worded scripture?

David says in the Psalms, I lie among men that are set on fire.

On the earth today there are ungodly men doing wickedness and experiencing God's wrath. There are also righteous sons of God, doing righteous deeds, experiencing God's blessing of everlasting life.

Jesus is ruling over the heavens and the earth, giving to each one of us now according to our works.

What you experience on earth depends on the quality of your daily interactions with Jesus. When we seek God, we find him, we live in the light doing righteous deeds. When we reject God, we live in darkness doing evil and suffering God's wrath. Both outcomes are occurring simultaneously now on earth.

A note from the author:

In the beginning there was one kingdom on earth.

God made the heavens and the earth. And God created Adam and Eve to rule over the earth. The kingdom of God ruled through mankind.

After Adam sinned, Adam no longer served God. Adam now served satan. There was still only one kingdom on earth, but now it was a kingdom of darkness. The ruler of the world was now the deceiver, the one called the devil, satan.

God loved us and determined to set us free. God sent Jesus into the world, into the darkness. Jesus, the son of God, was born a king. There were now two kingdoms on earth at the same time. The kingdom of God, a kingdom of light, ruled over by Jesus, and the kingdom of darkness, the world, ruled over by satan.

Jesus forgave sins. Jesus undid the bonds satan put on people causing physical infirmities. Jesus cast out demons dwelling in people. Jesus showed us the kingdom of God rules over satan.

Then Jesus went to the cross and died for us.

When man sinned, satan had legal rule over us, for we obeyed him. Satan could kill us if he chose for we were his servants. This is how death followed sin into the world.

But Jesus had no sin and had never served satan. When satan, working through unbelieving men, kills Jesus on the cross, satan murders an innocent man. God, who is a righteous judge, immediately judges satan a murderer and casts him out as ruler of the world.

Jesus, knowing what was coming, says on his way to the cross, now is the judgment of this world: now shall the prince of this world be cast out. Jesus understood what would happen at the cross. satan did not, or else he would never have murdered Jesus.

God raises Jesus out of the dead. God glorifies his son. Jesus appears to his disciples after his resurrection and says, all authority in heaven and on earth has been given to me, go therefore and make disciples...

There is now, once again, only one kingdom on earth. But now it is the kingdom of God, the kingdom of Light.

Jesus says,

Fear not, little flock; for it is your Father's good pleasure to give you the kingdom.

from Luke chapter 12

And the seventh angel sounded, and there were great voices in heaven, saying, The kingdoms of this world are become the kingdoms of our Lord, and of his Christ; and he shall reign for ever and ever.

And the four and twenty elders, which sat before God on their seats, fell upon their faces, and worshipped God, saying, We give you thanks, O Lord God Almighty, who is, and was, and are to come; because you have taken to you your great power, and has reigned.

And the nations were angry, and thy wrath is come, and the time of the dead, that they should be judged, and that you should give reward unto thy servants the prophets, and to the saints, and them that fear thy name, small and great; and should destroy them which destroy the earth.

from revelation chapter 11

A note from the author:

What does the kingdom of God tell us about the new heaven and new earth? I want to look at that topic next.

For he that will love life, and see good days, let him refrain his tongue from evil, and his lips that they speak no guile. Let him turn from evil, and do good; let him seek peace, and pursue it.

For the eyes of the Lord are over the righteous, and his ears are open unto their prayers, but the face of the Lord is against them that do evil.

from 1 Peter chapter 3

we, according to his promise, look for new heavens and a new earth, where in dwells righteousness.

2 Peter chapter 2

And I, John, saw a new heaven and a new earth: for the first heaven and the first earth were passed away; and there was no more sea.

And I saw the holy city, new Jerusalem, coming down from God out of heaven, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband.

And I heard a great voice out of heaven saying, Behold, the tabernacle of God is with men, and he will dwell with them, and they shall be his people, and God himself shall be with them, and be their God.

And God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes; and there shall be no more death, neither sorrow, nor crying, neither shall there be any more pain: for the former things are passed away.

And he that sat upon the throne said, Behold, I make all things new. And he said to me, Write: for these words are true and faithful.

And he said to me, It is done. I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end. I will give to him that is thirsty of the fountain of the water of life freely.

He that overcomes shall inherit all things; and I will be his God, and he shall be my son.

But the fearful, and unbelieving, and the abominable, and murderers, and whoremongers, and sorcerers, and idolaters, and all liars, shall have their part in the lake which burns with fire and brimstone: which is the second death.

from Revelation chapter 21

A note from the author:

We look for new heavens and a new earth in which righteousness dwells. It means we look for the removal of sin from the world.

John the Baptist says about Jesus, behold the Lamb of God, who takes away the sin of the world!

The cross is the foundation, the beginning, of the new heaven and new earth. We are the righteous ones. We are righteous by the blood of Jesus.

The old heaven (where satan stood before God as our accuser) and the old earth (where sin ruled) were both swept away by Jesus at the cross.

God raised Jesus out of the dead to be firstborn of his new creation. And God raises us up with Jesus. All who are baptized into Christ are a new creation. We are changed in baptism from old to new.

The new heaven and new earth are here now. The darkness is vanishing in the light of Jesus. Jesus and the cross are impacting every person. Sinners walking in darkness are transforming into saints walking in light. We are in the midst of the metamorphosis.

Those who refuse to repent are being destroyed from the earth and are returning to dust. The only ones who remain to the end in the kingdom of God are the righteous.

*

The Pharisees appeared very righteous before man, but God said they were hypocrites and whitewashed tombs. They thought they were in good standing with God, but were in fact the opposite. God was about to take the kingdom of God away from them and give it to others, to those who would produce the fruit of righteousness. The Pharisees were full of darkness, yet thought they were in the light.

I want to talk about light and darkness next, how we can know our own true condition and not deceive ourselves.

As Moses lifted up the serpent in the wilderness, even so must the Son of man be lifted up, that whoever believes in him should not die, but have eternal life.

For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believes in him should not die, but have everlasting life.

For God sent not his Son into the world to condemn the world; but that the world through him might be saved.

He that believes on him is not condemned: but he that believes not is condemned already, because he has not believed in the name of the only begotten Son of God.

And this is the condemnation, that light is come into the world, and men loved darkness rather than light, because their deeds were evil. For every one that does evil hates the light, neither comes to the light, lest his deeds should be reproved.

But he that does truth comes to the light, that his deeds may be made manifest, that they are wrought in God.

from John chapter 3

Then spoke Jesus again to them, saying, I am the light of the world: he that follows me shall not walk in darkness, but shall have the light of life.

from John chapter 8

This then is the message which we have heard of him and declare to you, that God is light, and in him is no darkness at all.

from 1 John 1

Whoever hates his brother is a murderer, and you know that no murderer has eternal life abiding in him.

from 1 John chapter 3

We know that we have passed from death to life, because we love the brethren. He that loves not his brother abides in death.

from 1 John chapter 3

By this we perceive the love of God, because he laid down his life for us, and we ought to lay down our lives for the brethren. But whoever has this world's goods, and sees his brother have need, and shuts up his bowels of compassion from him, how dwells the love of God in him? My little children, let us not love in word, neither in tongue; but in deed and in truth. And by this we know that we are of the truth, and shall assure our hearts before him.

from 1 John chapter 3

Beloved, let us love one another, for love is of God; and every one that loves is born out of God, and knows God. He that loves not knows not God; for God is love.

from 1 John chapter 4

He that hates his brother is in darkness, and walks in darkness, and knows not where he goes, because that darkness has blinded his eyes.

from 1 John chapter 2

He that loves his brother abides in the light, and there is no occasion of stumbling in him.

from 1 John chapter 2

Seeing you have purified your souls in obeying the truth through the Spirit to unfeigned love of the brethren, see that you love one another with a pure heart fervently, being born again, not of corruptible seed, but of incorruptible, by the word of God, which lives and abides for ever.

For all flesh is as grass, and all the glory of man as the flower of grass. The grass withers, and the flower of the grass falls away, but the word of the Lord endures for ever. And this is the word which by the gospel is preached unto you.

Therefore laying aside all malice, and all guile, and hypocrisies, and envies, and all evil speaking, as newborn babes, desire the sincere milk of the word, that you may grow by it, if so you have tasted that the Lord is gracious. To whom coming, as unto a living stone, disallowed indeed of men, but chosen of God, and precious, you also, as living stones, are built up a spiritual house, a holy priesthood, to offer up spiritual sacrifices, acceptable to God by Jesus Christ.

from 1 Peter chapter 2

What does it profit, my brethren, though a man say he has faith, if he has not works? can faith save him? If a brother or sister be naked, and destitute of daily food, and one of you say to them, depart in peace, be warmed and filled; and you do not give them those things which are needful to the body, what does it profit? Even so faith, if it has not works, is dead, being alone.

Yes, a man may say, you have faith and I have works: show me your faith without your works, and I will show you my faith by my works.

You believe that there is one God; you do well: the devils also believe and tremble. But will you know, O vain man, that faith without works is dead?

Was not Abraham our father justified by works, when he had offered Isaac his son upon the altar? See you how faith wrought with his works, and by works faith was made perfect? And the scripture was fulfilled which says, Abraham believed God, and it was imputed to him for righteousness: and he was called the Friend of God.

You see then how that by works a man is justified, and not by faith only. For as the body without the spirit is dead, so faith without works is dead also.

from James chapter 2

When the Son of man shall come in his glory, and all the holy angels with him, then shall he sit upon the throne of his glory: and before him shall be gathered all nations: and he shall separate them one from another, as a shepherd divides his sheep from the goats: And he shall set the sheep on his right hand, but the goats on the left.

Then shall the King say to them on his right hand, Come, you blessed of my Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world: For I was hungry, and you gave me meat. I was thirsty, and you gave me drink. I was a stranger, and you took me in. Naked, and you clothed me. I was sick, and you visited me. I was in prison, and you came to me.

Then shall the righteous answer him, saying, Lord, when did we see you hungry, and feed you? or thirsty, and gave you drink? When did we see you a stranger, and took you in? or naked, and clothed you? Or when did we see you sick, or in prison, and come to you?

And the King shall answer and say to them, Truly I say to you, Inasmuch as you have done it to one of the least of these my brethren, you have done it to me.

Then shall he say also to them on the left hand, Depart from me, you cursed, into everlasting fire, prepared for the devil and his angels. For I was hungry, and you gave me no meat. I was thirsty, and you gave me no drink. I was a stranger, and you took me not in. Naked, and you clothed me not. Sick, and in prison, and you visited me not.

Then shall they also answer him, saying, Lord, when did we see you hungry, or athirst, or a stranger, or naked, or sick, or in prison, and did not minister to you? Then shall he answer them, saying, Truly I say to you, Inasmuch as you did it not to one of the least of these, you did it not to me.

And these shall go away into everlasting punishment: but the righteous into life eternal. from Matthew chapter 25

A note from the author:

People chose to walk in light and do good, or chose to love evil and walk in darkness. It is possible to know a lot about Jesus and still be wicked. The demons know who Jesus is but they do not act like Jesus.

Jesus is watching what we do to others, for by our works we will show our nature, and he is inviting the righteous to enter into the kingdom of God.

This entrance into the kingdom of God is happening now on earth. People are now receiving from Jesus either everlasting punishment or eternal life according to their works. There is now a righteous judge ruling the earth.

Jesus said,

pray: Our Father which art in heaven, holy be your name.

Thy kingdom come, thy will be done in earth, as it is in heaven.

Give us this day our daily bread.

And forgive us our debts, as we forgive our debtors.

And lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from evil,
for yours is the kingdom, and the power, and the glory,
forever. Amen.

from Matthew chapter 6

A note from the author:

Do you see the beauty of this prayer?

We ask for God's kingdom. We ask for God's will to be done on earth. We ask to be delivered from evil.

What we ask, we receive.

Jesus now rules heaven and earth. Jesus always does the will of the Father. We now have the kingdom of God on earth. We have received what we asked.

Thomas refused to believe Jesus was alive until he saw Jesus alive for himself.

In like manner, many of us insist on seeing the kingdom before we will believe it is here, so we die and go to heaven and then see what we had all along on earth.

We are waiting for the kingdom of God. We are waiting for what we already have. We asked and God gave. That is the beauty of this prayer. The kingdom of God is now ours.

Paul writes,

And you he has quickened, who were dead in trespasses and sins; wherein in time past you walked according to the course of this world, according to the prince of the power of the air, the spirit that now works in the children of disobedience: Among whom also we all had our conversation in times past in the lusts of our flesh, fulfilling the desires of the flesh and of the mind; and were by nature the children of wrath, even as others.

But God, who is rich in mercy, for his great love wherewith he loved us, even when we were dead in sins, has quickened us together with Christ, (by grace you are saved;) and has raised us up together, and made us sit together in heavenly places in Christ Jesus: that in the ages to come he might show the exceeding riches of his grace in his kindness toward us through Christ Jesus.

For by grace you are saved through faith; and that not of yourselves: it is the gift of God: not of works, lest any man should boast.

For we are his workmanship, created in Christ Jesus to good works, which God has before ordained that we should walk in them.

from Ephesians chapter 2

You are the temple of the living God; as God has said, I will dwell in them, and walk in them; and I will be their God, and they shall be my people.

Therefore come out from among them, and be you separate, says the Lord, and touch not the unclean thing; and I will receive you. And will be a Father to you, and you shall be my sons and daughters, says the Lord Almighty.

Having therefore these promises, dearly beloved, let us cleanse ourselves from all filthiness of the flesh and spirit, perfecting holiness in the fear of God.

from 2 Corinthians chapter 7

Whoever is born of God overcomes the world: and this is the victory that overcomes the world, even our faith.

from 1 John chapter 5

He that has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches.

To him that overcomes will I give to eat of the tree of life, which is in the midst of the paradise of God.

He that overcomes shall not be hurt by the second death.

To him that overcomes will I give to eat of the hidden manna, and will give him a white stone, and in the stone a new name written, which no man knows except who receives it.

He that overcomes, and keeps my works to the end, to him will I give power over the nations: and he shall rule them with a rod of iron; as the vessels of a potter shall they be broken to pieces: even as I received of my Father. And I will give him the morning star.

He that overcomes, the same shall be clothed in white raiment; and I will not blot out his name out of the book of life, but I will confess his name before my Father, and before his angels.

He that overcomes will I make a pillar in the temple of my God, and he shall no more go out, and I will write upon him the name of my God, and the name of the city of my God, which is new Jerusalem, which comes down out of heaven from my God: and I will write upon him my new name.

To him that overcomes will I grant to sit with me in my throne, even as I also overcame, and am set down with my Father in his throne.

He that overcomes shall inherit all things; and I will be his God, and he shall be my son.

from Revelation chapters 2, 3, and 21

Simon Peter, a servant and an apostle of Jesus Christ, to them that have obtained like precious faith with us through the righteousness of God and our Savior Jesus Christ:

Grace and peace be multiplied to you through the knowledge of God, and of Jesus our Lord,

According as his divine power **has** given to us all things that pertain to life and godliness, through the knowledge of him that has called us to glory and virtue;

Whereby are given to us exceeding great and precious promises: that by these you might be partakers of the divine nature, having escaped the corruption that is in the world through lust.

And beside this, giving all diligence, add to your faith virtue; and to virtue knowledge; and to knowledge temperance; and to temperance patience; and to patience godliness; and to godliness brotherly kindness; and to brotherly kindness charity.

For if these things be in you, and abound, they make you, that you shall neither be barren nor unfruitful in the knowledge of our Lord Jesus Christ.

But he that lacks these things is blind, and cannot see afar off, and **has forgotten that he was purged from his old sins.**

Wherefore the rather, brethren, give diligence to make your calling and election sure: for if you do these things, you shall never fall. For so an entrance shall be ministered to you abundantly into the everlasting kingdom of our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ.

from 2 Peter chapter 1

And when many people were gathered together, and were come to him out of every city, Jesus spoke by a parable:

A sower went out to sow his seed: and as he sowed, some fell by the way side; and it was trodden down, and the fowls of the air devoured it.

And some fell upon a rock; and as soon as it was sprung up, it withered away, because it lacked moisture.

And some fell among thorns; and the thorns sprang up with it, and choked it.

And other fell on good ground, and sprang up, and bore fruit a hundred-fold. And when he had said these things, he cried, He that has ears to hear, let him hear.

And his disciples asked him, saying, What might this parable be?

And he said, To you it is given to know the mysteries of the kingdom of God, but to others in parables; that seeing they might not see, and hearing they might not understand.

Now the parable is this: The seed is the word of God.

Those by the way side are they that hear; then comes the devil, and takes away the word out of their hearts, lest they should believe and be saved.

They on the rock are they, which, when they hear, receive the word with joy; and these have no root, which for a while believe, and in time of temptation fall away.

And that which fell among thorns are they, which, when they have heard, go forth, and are choked with cares and riches and pleasures of this life, and bring no fruit to perfection.

But that on the good ground are they, which in an honest and good heart, having heard the word, keep it, and bring forth fruit with patience.

from Luke chapter 8

Enter you in at the narrow gate: for wide is the gate, and broad is the way, that leads to destruction, and there are many which go in there; because narrow is the gate, and narrow is the way, which leads to life, and there are few that find it.

Beware of false prophets, which come to you in sheep's clothing, but inwardly they are ravening wolves.

You shall know them by their fruits. Do men gather grapes of thorns, or figs of thistles? Even so every good tree brings forth good fruit; but a corrupt tree brings forth evil fruit.

A good tree cannot bring forth evil fruit, neither can a corrupt tree bring forth good fruit. Every tree that brings not forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast into the fire. Therefore by their fruits you shall know them.

Not every one that says to me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that does the will of my Father which is in heaven.

Many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in thy name? and in thy name have cast out demons? and in thy name done many wonderful works? And then I will profess to them, I never knew you: depart from me, you that work iniquity.

Therefore whoever hears these sayings of mine, and does them, I will liken him unto a wise man, which built his house upon a rock: and the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that house; and it fell not: for it was founded upon a rock.

And everyone that hears these sayings of mine, and does them not, shall be likened unto a foolish man, which built his house upon the sand: and the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that house; and it fell: and great was the fall of it.

from Matthew chapter 7

Paul writes,

For I have received of the Lord that which also I delivered unto you, That the Lord Jesus the same night in which he was betrayed took bread: And when he had given thanks, he brake it, and said, Take, eat: this is my body, which is broken for you: this do in remembrance of me.

After the same manner also he took the cup, when he had supped, saying, This cup is the new testament in my blood: this do you, as oft as you drink it, in remembrance of me.

For as often as you eat this bread, and drink this cup, you do show the Lord's death till he come.

Therefore whoever shall eat this bread, and drink this cup of the Lord, unworthily, shall be guilty of the body and blood of the Lord. But **let a man examine himself**, and so let him eat of that bread, and drink of that cup.

For he that eats and drinks unworthily, eats and drinks damnation to himself, not discerning the Lord's body. **For this cause many are weak and sickly among you, and many sleep.**

For if we would judge ourselves, we should not be judged. But when we are judged, we are chastened of the Lord, that we should not be condemned with the world.

from 1 Corinthians chapter 11

Examine yourselves, whether you be in the faith; prove your own selves. **Know you not your own selves, how that Jesus Christ is in you, except you be reprobates?**

Be perfect, be of good comfort, be of one mind, live in peace; and the God of love and peace shall be with you.

The grace of the Lord Jesus Christ, and the love of God, and the communion of the Holy Ghost, be with you all.
Amen.

excerpts from 2 Corinthians chapter 13

For the wrath of God is [also] revealed from heaven against all ungodliness and unrighteousness of men.

For the invisible things of him from the creation of the world are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, even his eternal power and Godhead; so that they are without excuse: because that, when they knew God, they glorified him not as God, neither were thankful; but became vain in their imaginations, and their foolish heart was darkened.

And even as they did not like to retain God in their knowledge, God gave them over to **a reprobate** mind, to do those things which are not good; being filled with all unrighteousness, fornication, wickedness, covetousness, maliciousness; full of envy, murder, debate, deceit, malignity; whisperers, backbiters, haters of God, spiteful, proud, boasters, inventors of evil things, disobedient to parents, without understanding, covenant breakers, without natural affection, implacable, unmerciful. Who knowing the judgment of God, that they which commit such things are worthy of death, not only do the same, but have pleasure in them that do them.

The judgment of God is according to truth against them which commit such things.

excerpts from Romans chapters 1 and 2

It is not possible that the blood of bulls and of goats should take away sins.

Therefore when Jesus comes into the world, he said ... In burnt offerings and sacrifices for sin you have had no pleasure. ... Lo, I come to do thy will, O God.

He takes away the first [covenant], that he may establish the second. By which will we are sanctified through the offering of the body of Jesus Christ once for all.

Every priest stands daily ministering and offering oftentimes the same sacrifices, which can never take away sins. But this man, after he had offered one sacrifice for sins forever, sat down on the right hand of God, until his enemies be made his footstool. For by one offering he has perfected forever those that are sanctified.

The Holy Spirit also is a witness to us. For after he said, This is the covenant that I will make with them after those days, says the Lord, I will put my laws into their hearts, and in their minds will I write them; he said, And their sins and iniquities will I remember no more. Now where remission of these is, there is no more offering for sin.

Having therefore, brethren, boldness to enter into the holies by the blood of Jesus, by a new and living way, which he has consecrated for us, through the veil, that is to say, his flesh; and having an high priest over the house of God; let us draw near with a true heart in full assurance of faith, having our hearts sprinkled from an evil conscience, and our bodies washed with pure water.

from Hebrews chapter 10

Jesus has now obtained a more excellent ministry. He is the mediator of a better covenant, which was established upon better promises. For if that first covenant had been faultless, then should no place have been sought for the second.

For finding fault, he says, Behold, the days come, says the Lord, when I will make a new covenant with the house of Israel and with the house of Judah: Not according to the covenant that I made with their fathers in the day when I took them by the hand to lead them out of the land of Egypt, because they did not continue in my covenant, and I did not regard them, says the Lord.

For this is the covenant that I will make with the house of Israel after those days, says the Lord; I will put my laws into their mind, and write them in their hearts: and I will be to them a God, and they shall be to me a people. And they shall not teach every man his neighbor, and every man his brother, saying, Know the Lord: for all shall know me, from the least to the greatest. For I will be merciful to their unrighteousness, and their sins and their iniquities will I remember no more.

In that he says, a new covenant, he has made the first old; now that which decays and waxes old is ready to vanish away.

from Hebrews chapter 8

And Zacchae'us stood, and said to the Lord: Behold, Lord, the half of my goods I give to the poor; and if I have taken any thing from any man by false accusation, I restore him fourfold.

And Jesus said to him, This day is salvation come to this house, for as he also is a son of Abraham. For the Son of man is come to seek and to save that which was lost.

And as they heard these things, he added and spoke a parable, because he was close to Jerusalem, and because they thought that the kingdom of God should immediately appear.

He said therefore, A certain nobleman went into a far country to receive for himself a kingdom, and to return. And he called his ten servants, and delivered them ten pounds, and said to them, Occupy till I come.

But his citizens hated him, and sent a message after him, saying, We will not have this man to reign over us.

And it came to pass, that when he was returned, having received the kingdom, then he commanded these servants to be called to him, to whom he had given the money, that he might know how much every man had gained by trading.

Then came the first, saying, Lord, your pound has gained ten pounds. And he said to him, Well, you good servant: because you have been faithful in a very little, have authority over ten cities.

And the second came, saying, Lord, your pound has gained five pounds. And he said likewise to him, Be you also over five cities.

And another came, saying, Lord, behold, here is your pound, which I have kept laid up in a napkin: for I feared you, because you are an austere man: you take up that you laid not down, and reap that you did not sow.

And he says to him, Out of your own mouth will I judge

you, you wicked servant. You knew that I was an austere man, taking up that I laid not down, and reaping that I did not sow: wherefore then gave not you my money into the bank, that at my coming I might have required mine own with usury?

And he said to them that stood by, Take from him the pound, and give it to him that has ten pounds. (And they said to him, Lord, he has ten pounds.)

For I say to you, That to everyone which has, shall be given [more]; and from him that has not, even that he has shall be taken away from him.

But those mine enemies, which would not that I should reign over them, bring here, and slay them before me.

And when he had thus spoken, Jesus went before, ascending up to Jerusalem.

from Luke chapter 19

You are a chosen generation, a royal priesthood, an holy nation, a peculiar people; that you should show forth the praises of him who has called you out of darkness into his marvelous light.

from 1 Peter chapter 2

For the grace of God that brings salvation has appeared to all men, teaching us that, denying ungodliness and worldly lusts, we should live soberly, righteously, and godly, in this present world. Looking for that blessed hope, and the glorious appearing of the great God and our Savior Jesus Christ; who gave himself for us, that he might redeem us from all iniquity, and purify to himself a peculiar people, zealous of good works.

from Titus chapter 1

Paul writes,

we are bound to give thanks always to God for you, brethren beloved of the Lord, because God has from the beginning chosen you to salvation through sanctification of the Spirit and belief of the truth: Whereunto he called you by our gospel, to the obtaining of the glory of our Lord Jesus Christ.

from 2 Thessalonians chapter 2

now once in the end of the world has Christ appeared to put away sin by the sacrifice of himself. And as it is appointed to men once to die, but after this the judgment, so Christ was once offered to bear the sins of many. And to them that look for him, he shall appear the second time without sin to salvation.

excerpts from Hebrews chapter 9

A note from the author:

I want to look next at our daily life as a child of God.

Jesus said,

And I say to you, Ask, and it shall be given you; seek, and you shall find; knock, and it shall be opened to you. For everyone that asks, receives; and he that seeks, finds; and to him that knocks, it shall be opened.

If a son shall ask bread of any of you that is a father, will he give him a stone? or if he ask a fish, will he for a fish give him a serpent? Or if he shall ask an egg, will he offer him a scorpion? If you then, being evil, know how to give good gifts to your children: how much more shall your heavenly Father give the Holy Spirit to them that ask him?

And he was casting out a devil, and it was dumb. And it came to pass, when the devil was gone out, the dumb spoke; and the people wondered.

from Luke chapter 11

Now in the morning as Jesus returned into the city, he hungered. And when he saw a fig tree in the way, he came to it, and found nothing thereon, but leaves only, and said to it, Let no fruit grow on you henceforward forever.

And presently the fig tree withered away. And when the disciples saw it, they marveled, saying, How soon is the fig tree withered away!

Jesus answered and said to them, Truly I say to you, If you have faith, and doubt not, you shall not only do this which is done to the fig tree, but also if you shall say to this mountain, Be you removed, and be you cast into the sea; it shall be done.

And all things, whatever you shall ask in prayer, believing, you shall receive.

from Matthew chapter 21

A note from the author:

Jesus models two types of life as a son of God.

The first is speaking to creation and creation obeys. The water and the wind obeyed Jesus. The fig tree obeyed Jesus. Creation is subject to Jesus because Jesus is the firstborn son of God.

Jesus tells us we have that same authority to speak to creation and it will obey us. He has delegated to us his own authority. Creation is now subject to us. Being a son of God, as Jesus is the son of God, we speak to creation and it obeys us.

The second type of life Jesus models is prayer, asking God our Father for something, or to do something, on our behalf. Ask and you will receive. Seek and you will find. Knock and it will be opened. Jesus says God the Father listens to a son of God. You will always receive God's favor and you will always have your request.

There is a reason this is an absolute, always, yes. Because you are righteous, your every request is righteous, and every answer therefore can be yes. God has given you the ability to always ask for what is good. It is your nature. This is why James writes, the effectual fervent prayer of a righteous man avails much.

Righteousness is the foundation of a powerful prayer life.

What is Jesus doing now as he is seated beside the Father? Praying for us because he loves us.

*

I want to look next at how our daily life with God is built by prayer, by the conversations we have with God.

Nevertheless I tell you the truth; It is expedient for you that I go away: for if I go not away, the Comforter will not come to you; but if I depart, I will send him to you.

And when he is come, he will reprove the world of sin, and of righteousness, and of judgment: Of sin, because they believe not on me; Of righteousness, because I go to my Father, and you see me no more; Of judgment, because the prince of this world is judged.

I have yet many things to say to you, but you cannot bear them now. When he, the Spirit of truth, is come, he will guide you into all truth: for he shall not speak of himself; but whatever he shall hear, that shall he speak: and he will show you things to come. He shall glorify me: for he shall receive of mine, and shall show it to you. All things that the Father has are mine: therefore I said, that he shall take of mine, and shall show it to you.

from John chapter 16

My sheep hear my voice, and I know them, and they follow me: and I give to them eternal life; and they shall never die, neither shall any man pluck them out of my hand. My Father, which gave them me, is greater than all; and no man is able to pluck them out of my Father's hand. I and my Father are one.

from John chapter 10

the Comforter, which is the Holy Spirit, whom the Father will send in my name, he shall teach you all things, and bring all things to your remembrance, whatever I have said to you.

from John chapter 14

A note from the author:

Jesus says my sheep (that's us) hear his voice.

How do we hear him? The Holy Spirit speaks to us.

We are born in baptism a spirit. And the Holy Spirit dwells in us. Spirit talks with spirit. The Holy Spirit says to us what he hears from Jesus and the Father. Because the Holy Spirit dwells inside us, we hear his words in our thoughts rather than hearing his words as an external sound.

The Holy Spirit is our perfect companion, he can perfectly hear God and he never misspeaks. He makes sure we hear perfectly what Jesus and the Father say to us.

Jesus is our Lord and Teacher. Our Father instructs us in the way we should go. Daily life with God is always a conversation, from him to us, and us to him. The Holy Spirit gives us the ability to hear and speak with God.

We have the Holy Spirit dwelling in us by asking God to give us that good gift. We ask and we receive. Jesus reassures us that the Holy Spirit is something God desires to give us.

*

Let's look at how the Holy Spirit arrives to both the Jews and the Gentiles and then explore what Paul tells us about what the Holy Spirit is doing now and how the Holy Spirit does his works.

Now when Jesus was risen early the first day of the week, he appeared first to Mary Magdalene, out of whom he had cast seven devils. And she went and told them that had been with him, as they mourned and wept.

And they, when they had heard that he was alive, and had been seen of her, believed not.

After that he appeared in another form to two of them, as they walked, and went into the country.

And they went and told it to the rest: neither they believed them.

Afterward Jesus appeared to the eleven as they sat at meat, and upbraided them with their unbelief and hardness of heart, because they believed not them which had seen him after he was risen.

And he said to them, Go you into all the world, and preach the gospel to every creature. **He that believes and is baptized shall be saved;** but he that believes not shall be damned.

And these signs shall follow them that believe; In my name shall they cast out devils; **they shall speak with new tongues;** they shall take up serpents; and if they drink any deadly thing, it shall not hurt them; they shall lay hands on the sick, and they shall recover.

So then after the Lord had spoken to them, he was received up into heaven, and sat on the right hand of God.

And they went forth, and preached everywhere, the Lord working with them, and confirming the word with signs following. Amen.

from Mark chapter 16

And when the day of Pentecost was fully come, they were all with one accord in one place. And suddenly there came a sound from heaven as of a rushing mighty wind, and it filled all the house where they were sitting. And there appeared to them cloven tongues like as of fire, and it sat upon each of them. And **they were all filled with the Holy Spirit, and began to speak** with other tongues, **as the Spirit gave them utterance.**

And there were dwelling at Jerusalem Jews, devout men, out of every nation under heaven. Now when this noise was heard abroad, the multitude came together, and were confounded, because that every man heard them speak in his own language.

And they were all amazed and marveled, saying one to another, Behold, are not all these which speak Galileans? And how hear we every man in our own tongue, wherein we were born? Parthians, and Medes, and Elamites, and the dwellers in Mesopotamia, and in Judaea, and Cappadocia, in Pontus, and Asia, Phrygia, and Pamphylia, in Egypt, and in the parts of Libya about Cyrene, and strangers of Rome, Jews and proselytes, Cretes and Arabians, **we do hear them speak in our tongues the wonderful works of God.**

excerpts from Acts chapter 2

There was a certain man in Caesarea called Cornelius, a centurion of the band called the Italian band, A devout man, and one that feared God with all his house, which gave much alms to the people, and prayed to God always.

He saw in a vision evidently about the ninth hour of the day an angel of God coming in to him, and saying to him, Cornelius.

And when he looked on him, he was afraid, and said, What is it, Lord? And he said to him, Your prayers and your alms are come up for a memorial before God. And now send men to Joppa, and call for one Simon, whose surname is Peter, he lodges with one Simon a tanner, whose house is by the sea side: he shall tell you what you ought to do.

And when the angel which spoke to Cornelius was departed, he called two of his household servants, and a devout soldier of them that waited on him continually, and when he had declared all these things to them, he sent them to Joppa.

Cornelius waited for them, and he had called together his kinsmen and near friends.

[Peter comes. And Cornelius describes the vision.]

Then Peter said, Of a truth I perceive that God is no respecter of persons: but in every nation he that fears him, and works righteousness, is accepted with him.

The word which God sent to the children of Israel, preaching peace by Jesus Christ: (he is Lord of all:) that word, I say, you know; which was published throughout all Judea, and began from Galilee, after the baptism which John preached; how God anointed Jesus of Nazareth with the Holy Spirit and with power: who went about doing good, and healing all that were oppressed of the devil; for God was with him.

And we are witnesses of all things which he did both in the land of the Jews, and in Jerusalem; whom they killed and hanged on a tree: Him God raised up the third day, and showed him openly; not to all the people, but to witnesses chosen before God, even to us, who did eat and drink with him after he rose from the dead.

And he commanded us to preach to the people, and to testify that it is he which was ordained of God to be the Judge of living and dead. To him give all the prophets witness, that through his name whoever believes in him shall receive remission of sins.

While Peter yet spoke these words, the Holy Spirit fell on all them which heard the word.

And they of the circumcision which believed were astonished, as many as came with Peter, because that **on the Gentiles also was poured out the gift of the Holy Spirit. For they heard them speak with tongues, and magnify God.**

Then answered Peter, Can any man forbid water, that these should not be baptized, which have received the Holy Spirit as well as we? And he commanded them to be baptized in the name of the Lord.

excerpts from Acts chapter 10

Peter said, [speaking about this experience with Cornelius,]

And the Spirit bade me go with them, nothing doubting. Moreover these six brethren accompanied me, and we entered into the man's house: And he showed us how he had seen an angel in his house, which stood and said to him, Send men to Joppa, and call for Simon, whose surname is Peter; who shall tell you words, whereby you and all your house shall be saved.

And as I began to speak, the Holy Spirit fell on them, as on us at the beginning.

Then I remembered the word of the Lord, how that he said, John indeed baptized with water; but you shall be baptized with the Holy Spirit.

Forasmuch then as God gave them the like gift as he did to us, who believed on the Lord Jesus Christ; what was I, that I could withstand God? When they heard these things, they held their peace, and glorified God, saying, **Then has God also to the Gentiles granted repentance unto life.**

from Acts chapter 11

Certain men which came down from Judea taught the brethren, and said, Except you be circumcised after the manner of Moses, you cannot be saved.

When therefore Paul and Barnabas had no small dissension and dispute with them, they determined that Paul and Barnabas, and certain other of them, should go up to Jerusalem to the apostles and elders about this question.

And the apostles and elders came together to consider of this matter.

There rose up certain of the sect of the Pharisees which believed, saying, That it was needful to circumcise them, and to command them to keep the law of Moses.

And when there had been much disputing, Peter rose up, and said to them, Men and brethren, you know how that a good while ago God made choice among us, that the Gentiles by my mouth should hear the word of the gospel, and believe.

And God, which knows the hearts, bore them witness, giving them the Holy Spirit, even as he did to us; and put no difference between us and them, purifying their hearts by faith.

Now therefore why tempt you God, to put a yoke upon the neck of the disciples, which neither our fathers nor we were able to bear? But we believe that through the grace of the Lord Jesus Christ we shall be saved, even as they.

Then all the multitude kept silence, and gave audience to Barnabas and Paul, declaring what miracles and wonders God had wrought among the Gentiles by them.

And after they had held their peace, James answered, saying, Men and brethren, listen to me: Simeon has declared how God at the first did visit the Gentiles, to take out of them a people for his name. **And to this agree the words of the prophets; as it is written, After this I will return, and will build again the tabernacle of David,**

which is fallen down; and I will build again the ruins thereof, and I will set it up: that the rest of men might seek after the Lord, and all the Gentiles, upon whom my name is called, said the Lord, who does all these things.

Known to God are all his works from the beginning of the world.

Wherefore my decision is, that we not trouble them, which from among the Gentiles are turned to God, but that we write to them, that they abstain from pollutions of idols, and from fornication, and from things strangled, and from blood. For Moses from time of old has in every city them that preach him, being read in the synagogues every Sabbath day.

Then pleased it the apostles and elders with the whole church, to send chosen men of their own company to Antioch with Paul and Barnabas; namely, Judas and Silas, chief men among the brethren: and they wrote letters by them.

excerpts from Acts chapter 15

[This is the Tabernacle of David James refers to]

So they brought the ark of God, and set it **in the midst of the tent that David had pitched** for it. And when David had made an end of offering the burnt offerings and the peace offerings, he blessed the people in the name of the Lord. And he dealt to every one of Israel, both man and woman, to every one a loaf of bread, and a good piece of meat, and a flask of wine.

And he appointed certain of the Levites to minister before the ark of the Lord, and to record, and to thank and praise the Lord God of Israel: with psalteries and with harps; with cymbals; with trumpets continually before the ark of the covenant of God. Then on that day David delivered this psalm to thank the Lord into the hand of Asaph and his

brethren.

Give thanks to the Lord, call upon his name, make known his deeds among the people. Sing to him, sing psalms to him, talk you of all his wondrous works. Glory you in his holy name.

Let the heart of them rejoice that seek the Lord. Seek the Lord and his strength, seek his face continually.

Remember his marvelous works that he has done, his wonders, and the judgments of his mouth; O you seed of Israel his servant, you children of Jacob, his chosen ones. He is the Lord our God; his judgments are in all the earth.

Be you mindful always of his covenant; the word which he commanded to a thousand generations; even of the covenant which he made with Abraham, and of his oath to Isaac; And has confirmed the same to Jacob for a law, and to Israel for an everlasting covenant, saying,

To you will I give the land of Canaan, the lot of your inheritance; when your were but few, even a few, and strangers in it. And when they went from nation to nation, and from one kingdom to another people; he suffered no man to do them wrong: yea, he reprov'd kings for their sakes, saying, Touch not mine anointed, and do my prophets no harm.

Sing to the Lord, all the earth; show forth from day to day his salvation. Declare his glory among the heathen; his marvelous works among all nations.

For great is the Lord, and greatly to be praised: he also is to be feared above all gods. For all the gods of the people are idols: but the Lord made the heavens. Glory and honor are in his presence; strength and gladness are in his place.

Give to the Lord, you kindred of the people, give to the Lord glory and strength. Give to the Lord the glory due to his name: bring an offering, and come before him: worship the Lord in the beauty of holiness.

Fear before him, all the earth: the world also shall be stable, that it be not moved. Let the heavens be glad, and let the earth rejoice: and let men say among the nations, The Lord reigns.

Let the sea roar, and the fullness thereof: let the fields rejoice, and all that is therein. Then shall the trees of the wood sing out at the presence of the Lord, because he comes to judge the earth.

O give thanks to the Lord; for he is good; for his mercy endures for ever. And say you, Save us, O God of our salvation, and gather us together, and deliver us from the heathen, that we may give thanks to thy holy name, and glory in thy praise.

Blessed be the Lord God of Israel for ever and ever. And all the people said, Amen, and praised the Lord.

So David left there before the ark of the covenant of the Lord Asaph and his brethren, to minister before the ark continually, as every day's work required.

And Zadok the priest, and his brethren the priests, before the tabernacle of the Lord in the high place that was at Gibeon, to offer burnt offerings to the Lord upon the altar of the burnt offering continually morning and evening, and to do according to all that is written in the law of the Lord, which he commanded Israel;

and with them the rest that were chosen, who were expressed by name, **to give thanks to the Lord, because his mercy endures for ever**; with trumpets and cymbals for those that should make a sound, and with musical instruments of God.

excerpts from 1 Chronicles chapter 16

now you are light in the Lord: walk as children of light: (For the fruit of the Spirit is in all goodness and righteousness and truth;) Proving what is acceptable to the Lord.

And have no fellowship with the unfruitful works of darkness, but rather reprove them. For it is a shame even to speak of those things which are done of them in secret. But all things that are reproved are made manifest by the light: for whatever does make manifest is light. Therefore he said, Awake you that sleeps, and arise from the dead, and Christ shall give you light.

See then that you walk circumspectly, not as fools, but as wise, redeeming the time, because the days are evil. Therefore be you not unwise, but understanding what the will of the Lord is.

And be not drunk with wine, wherein is excess; but **be filled with the Spirit, speaking to yourselves in psalms and hymns and spiritual songs, singing and making melody in your heart to the Lord; Giving thanks always** for all things to God and the Father in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ; submitting yourselves one to another in the fear of God.

from Ephesians chapter 5

Follow after love, and desire spiritual gifts.

He that speaks in an unknown tongue speaks not to men, but to God: for no man understands him; howbeit **in the spirit he speaks mysteries.**

He that speaks in an unknown tongue builds up himself; but he that prophesies builds up the church.

I would that you all spoke with tongues, but more that you prophesied, for greater is he that prophesies than he that speaks with tongues, except he interpret, that the church may receive building up.

Inasmuch as you are zealous of spiritual gifts, seek that you may excel to the building up of the church. Therefore let him that speaks in an unknown tongue pray that he may interpret.

For if I pray in an unknown tongue, my spirit prays, but my mind is unfruitful. What is it then? **I will pray with the spirit, and I will pray with the mind also: I will sing with the spirit, and I will sing with the mind also.**

Else when you shall bless with the spirit, how shall he that occupies the room of the unlearned say Amen at your giving of thanks, seeing he understands not what you say? For **you truly give thanks well**, but the other is not built up.

I thank my God, I speak with tongues more than you all. Yet in the church I would rather speak five words with my mind, that by my voice I might teach others also, than ten thousand words in an unknown tongue.

Brethren, be not children in understanding: in malice be you children, but in understanding be men.

In the law it is written, With men of other tongues and other lips will I speak to this people; and yet for all that will they not hear me, said the Lord.

excerpts from 1 Corinthians chapter 14

[This is the old testament passage Paul quotes from:]

In that day shall the Lord of hosts be for a crown of glory, and for a diadem of beauty to the rest of his people, and for a spirit of judgment to him that sits in judgment, and for strength to them that turn the battle to the gate.

But they also have erred through wine, and through strong drink are out of the way; the priest and the prophet have erred through strong drink, they are swallowed up of wine, they are out of the way through strong drink; they err in vision, they stumble in judgment. For all tables are full of vomit and filthiness, so that there is no place clean.

Whom shall he teach knowledge? and whom shall he make to understand doctrine? them that are weaned from the milk, and drawn from the breasts. For precept must be upon precept, precept upon precept; line upon line, line upon line; here a little, and there a little: **for with stammering lips and another tongue will he speak to this people. To whom he said, This is the rest wherewith you may cause the weary to rest; and this is the refreshing: yet they would not hear.**

But the word of the Lord was to them precept upon precept, precept upon precept; line upon line, line upon line; here a little, and there a little; that they might go, and fall backward, and be broken, and snared, and taken.

Wherefore hear the word of the Lord, you scornful men, that rule this people which is in Jerusalem.

Because you have said, We have made a covenant with death, and with hell are we at agreement; when the overflowing scourge shall pass through, it shall not come unto us: for we have made lies our refuge, and under falsehood have we hid ourselves: Therefore thus says the Lord God, Behold, I lay in Zion for a foundation a stone, a tried stone, a precious corner stone, a sure foundation: he that believes shall not make haste.

Judgment also will I lay to the line, and righteousness to the plummet: and the hail shall sweep away the refuge of lies, and the waters shall overflow the hiding place.

And your covenant with death shall be disannulled, and your agreement with hell shall not stand; when the overflowing scourge shall pass through, then you shall be trodden down by it.

From the time that it goes forth it shall take you: for morning by morning shall it pass over, by day and by night: and it shall be a vexation only to understand the report.

For the bed is shorter than that a man can stretch himself on it: and the covering narrower than that he can wrap himself in it.

For the Lord shall rise up as in mount Perazim, he shall be full of wrath as in the valley of Gibeon, that he may do his work, his strange work; and bring to pass his act, his strange act.

Now therefore be you not mockers, lest your bands be made strong: for I have heard from the Lord God of hosts an utter consuming is determined upon the whole earth.

from Isaiah chapter 28

[Paul also quotes from this Isaiah passage a second time here:]

After the reading of the law and the prophets the rulers of the synagogue sent to them, saying, You men and brethren, if you have any word of exhortation for the people, say on.

Then Paul stood up, and beckoning with his hand said, Men of Israel, and you that fear God, give attention. The God of this people of Israel chose our fathers, and exalted the people when they dwelt as strangers in the land of Egypt, and with an high arm brought he them out of it. And 40 years he suffered their deeds in the wilderness. And when

he had destroyed seven nations in the land of Canaan, he divided their land to them by lot.

And after that he gave to them judges for 450 years, until Samuel the prophet. And afterward they desired a king: and God gave to them Saul, a man of the tribe of Benjamin, for 40 years.

And when God had removed him, he raised up to them David to be their king; to whom also he gave their testimony, and said, I have found David the son of Jesse, a man after mine own heart, which shall fulfill all my will. Of this man's seed has God according to his promise raised to Israel a Savior, Jesus; when John had first preached before his coming the baptism of repentance to all the people of Israel. And as John fulfilled his course, he said, Whom think you that I am? I am not he. But, behold, there comes one after me, whose shoes of his feet I am not worthy to loose.

Men and brethren, children of the stock of Abraham, and whosoever among you fears God, to you is the word of this salvation sent.

For they that dwell at Jerusalem, and their rulers, because they knew him not, nor yet the voices of the prophets which are read every Sabbath day, they have fulfilled them in condemning him. And though they found no cause of death in Jesus, yet desired they Pilate that he should be slain. And when they had fulfilled all that was written of him, they took him down from the tree, and laid him in a tomb.

But God raised him from the dead. And he was seen many days of them which came up with him from Galilee to Jerusalem, who are his witnesses to the people.

And we declare to you glad tidings, how that the promise which was made to the fathers, God has fulfilled the same to us their children, in that he has raised up Jesus again; as it is also written in the second psalm, You are my Son, this day have I begotten you.

And as concerning that he raised him up from the dead, now no more to return to corruption, he said this, I will give you the sure mercies of David. Wherefore he said also in another psalm, You shall not suffer your Holy One to see corruption.

For David, after he had served his own generation by the will of God, fell asleep, and was laid unto his fathers, and saw corruption: But he, whom God raised again, saw no corruption.

Be it known to you therefore, men and brethren, that through this man is preached to you the forgiveness of sins: And by him all that believe are justified from all things, from which you could not be justified by the law of Moses.

Beware therefore, lest that come upon you, which is spoken of in the prophets; Behold, you despisers, and wonder, and perish: for I work a work in your days, a work which you shall in no wise believe, though a man declare it to you.

And when the Jews were gone out of the synagogue, the Gentiles besought that these words might be preached to them the next Sabbath. Now when the congregation was broken up, many of the Jews and religious proselytes followed Paul and Barnabas: who, speaking to them, persuaded them to continue in the grace of God.

from Acts chapter 13

Paul writes,

We speak wisdom among them that are perfect: yet not the wisdom of this world, nor of the princes of this world, that come to naught: but **we speak the wisdom of God in a mystery, even the hidden wisdom, which God ordained before the world to our glory:** which none of the princes of this world knew: for had they known it, they would not have crucified the Lord of glory.

But as it is written, Eye has not seen, nor ear heard, neither have entered into the heart of man, **the things which God has prepared for them that love him.** But **God has revealed them to us by his Spirit:** for the Spirit searches all things, yes, the deep things of God. For what man knows the things of a man, save the spirit of man which is in him? even so the things of God knows no man, but the Spirit of God.

Now **we have received,** not the spirit of the world, but **the spirit which is of God; that we might know the things that are freely given to us of God.**

Which things also we speak, not in the words which man's wisdom teaches, but **which the Holy Spirit teaches;** connecting spiritual things with spiritual.

But the natural man receives not the things of the Spirit of God: for they are foolishness to him: neither can he know them, because they are spiritually discerned. But he that is spiritual judges all, yet he himself is judged of no man. For who has known the mind of the Lord, that he may instruct him? But we have the mind of Christ.

excerpts from 1 Corinthians chapter 2

Jesus said,

And I will pray [to] the Father, and he shall give you another Comforter, that he may abide with you for ever; even the Spirit of truth; whom the world cannot receive, because it sees him not, neither knows him: but you know him; for he dwells with you, and shall be in you.

I will not leave you comfortless: I will come to you. Yet a little while, and the world sees me no more; but you see me: because I live, you shall live also. He that has my commandments, and keeps them, he it is that loves me: and he that loves me shall be loved of my Father, and I will love him, and will manifest myself to him.

Judas said to him, not Iscariot, Lord, how is it that you will manifest yourself to us, and not to the world?

Jesus answered and said to him, If a man love me, he will keep my words: and my Father will love him, and we will come to him, and make our abode with him.

These things have I spoken to you, being yet present with you. But the Comforter, which is the Holy Spirit, whom the Father will send in my name, he shall teach you all things, and bring all things to your remembrance, whatever I have said to you.

I have yet many things to say to you, but you cannot bear them now. Howbeit when he, **the Spirit of truth**, is come, he will guide you into all truth: for he shall not speak of himself; but **whatever he shall hear, that shall he speak: and he will show you things to come.** He shall glorify me: for **he shall receive of mine, and shall show it to you.** All things that the Father has are mine: therefore said I, that he shall take of mine, and shall show it to you.

excerpts from John chapter 14 through 16

In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and **the Word was God**. The same was in the beginning with God. **All things were made by him**; and without him was not any thing made that was made.

In him was life; and the life was the light of men. And the light shines in darkness; and the darkness comprehended it not.

There was a man sent from God, whose name was John. The same came for a witness, to bear witness of the Light, that all men through him might believe. He was not that Light, but was sent to bear witness of that Light.

That was the true Light, which lights every man that comes into the world. He was in the world, and the world was made by him, and the world knew him not.

He came to his own, and his own received him not. But as many as received him, to them gave he power to become the sons of God, even to them that believe on his name: which were born, not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God.

And **the Word was made flesh**, and dwelt among us, (and we beheld his glory, the glory as of the only begotten of the Father,) **full of grace and truth**.

John bore witness of him, and cried, saying, This was he of whom I spoke, He that comes after me is preferred before me: for he was before me.

And of his fullness have we all received, and grace for grace. For the law was given by Moses, but grace and truth came by Jesus Christ. No man has seen God at any time, the only begotten Son, which is in the bosom of the Father, he has declared him.

from John chapter 1

the Spirit also helps our infirmities: for we know not what we should pray for as we ought: but the Spirit itself makes intercession for us with groanings which cannot be uttered.

And he that searches the hearts knows what is the mind of the Spirit, because **he makes intercession for the saints according to the will of God.**

And we know that all things work together for good to them that love God, to them who are the called according to his purpose.

For whom he did foreknow, he also did predestinate to be conformed to the image of his Son, that he might be the firstborn among many brethren.

Moreover whom he did predestinate, them he also called: and whom he called, them he also justified: and whom he justified, them he also glorified.

from Romans chapter 8

A note from the author:

The Holy Spirit is busy in our lives. He is helping us. He is doing so through written words, the scriptures, and his own spoken words. Look at four distinct interactions we have with the Holy Spirit.

First. We understand scripture as we read it. This is the Holy Spirit giving us understanding of the words of God which he inspired be written.

Second. Jesus said my sheep hear my voice. We hear the Holy Spirit speak to us in our thoughts what he hears from Jesus and the Father. Jesus teaches us directly. God instructs us on which way to go.

Third. The Holy Spirit prays for us. Jesus seated beside the father, is also praying for us. They do this because they love us. We aren't involved in this prayer, it's the lover prayer for the one he loves, asking God for what is perfectly needed; it is their prayers said on our behalf.

Fourth. The Holy Spirit works by speaking his words through us in another language, another tongue, a language we did not know before we were baptized. I want to explore this more in depth.

When we speak with another language, another tongue, the words the Holy Spirit gives to us, we are speaking his own words. It shouldn't surprise us that God prefers to use his own language rather than a language of man, like English or Chinese. Psalm 12 tells us God speaks pure words.

We don't need to understand the words of the Holy Spirit with our mind for them to have meaning. Spirit understands spirit. We are born of spirit in baptism. Our spirit knows and understands perfectly the language of the Holy Spirit. We know in our spirit what the Holy Spirit is saying.

The Holy Spirit is God. In Genesis God said, let there be light, and there was light. When God speaks words, they create what is said. What is spoken, occurs.

The Holy Spirit gives us words to speak, those words are from God, and so what we say occurs. The scripture says we speak mysteries. The Holy Spirit reveals what God has freely given to us by speaking it into existence.

God has prepared a wonderful and perfect plan for each one of us. God has given us the Holy Spirit. The Holy Spirit gives us God's words. We are the ones who speak those words. That is how we partner with God to accomplish his will. God reveals all that he has prepared for us by speaking it into existence. God gives us the privilege of speaking what God has prepared for us in his love for us. We speak God's words and what we say occurs.

When you speak in another language with the words the Holy Spirit gives you, you are building up yourself. You are growing with a growth that comes from God.

Paul writes that when we speak in tongues we should then pray for the interpretation because God also desires to build up the church. When you ask for the interpretation of what was said in the language of the spirit, you will know in your mind what God was speaking to you, and you can then share that understanding with others, you can build up the church.

God speaks only truth. The Holy Spirit speaks only truth. We can trust these words we speak which come from God. They are good words which produce good in us and all around us.

When we speak in the spirit or sing in the spirit, because the Holy Spirit is helping us, we are also able to give perfect praise and thanks to God our Father and our Lord Jesus Christ for these gifts God is freely giving us.

*

Let's look further at some of the safeguards God provides as we interact with the kingdom of God, then explore more about what Jesus tells us about the kingdom and how it operates.

I, Jesus, have sent my angel to testify unto you these things in the churches. I am the root and the offspring of David, and the bright and morning star.

from Revelation chapter 22

Peter writes,

We have not followed cunningly devised fables, when we made known to you the power and coming of our Lord Jesus Christ, but were eyewitnesses of his majesty.

For he received from God the Father honor and glory, when there came such a voice to him from the excellent glory, This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased.

And this voice which came from heaven we heard, when we were with him in the holy mount.

We have also a more sure word of prophecy; which you do well that you take heed, as to a light that shines in a dark place, until the day dawn, and the day star arise in your hearts.

Knowing this first, that no prophecy of the scripture is of any private interpretation. For the prophecy came not in old time by the will of man, but holy men of God spoke as they were moved by the Holy Spirit.

But there were false prophets also among the people, even as there shall be false teachers among you, who shall bring in damnable heresies, even denying the Lord that bought them, and bring upon themselves swift destruction.

And many shall follow their pernicious ways; by reason of whom the way of truth shall be evil spoken of. And through covetousness, they shall with feigned words make merchandise of you, whose judgment now of a long time lingers not, and their damnation slumbers not.

from 2 Peter chapters 1 and 2

Beloved, believe not every spirit, but try the spirits whether they are out of God: because many false prophets are gone out into the world.

By this you know the Spirit of God: every spirit that confesses that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh is out of God, and every spirit that confesses not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh is not out of God: and this is that spirit of antichrist, which you have heard that it should come, and even now already it is in the world.

You are out of God, little children, and have overcome them: because greater is he that is in you, than he that is in the world.

They are of the world: therefore they speak out of the world, and the world hears them.

We are out of God: he that knows God hears us; he that is not out of God does not hear us. By this we know the spirit of truth, and the spirit of error.

from 1 John chapter 4

Whoever transgresses and abides not in the teachings of Christ, has not God.

from 2 John

Jesus said to them, Did you never read in the scriptures, The stone which the builders rejected, the same is become the head of the corner: this is the Lord's doing, and it is marvelous in our eyes? Therefore say I to you, The kingdom of God shall be taken from you, and given to a nation bringing forth the fruits of it. And whosoever shall fall on this stone shall be broken: but on whomsoever it shall fall, it will grind him to powder.

And when the chief priests and Pharisees had heard his parables, they perceived that he spoke of them. But when they sought to lay hands on him, they feared the multitude, because they took him for a prophet.

And Jesus answered and spoke to them again by parables, and said,

The kingdom of heaven is like to a certain king, which made a marriage for his son, and sent forth his servants to call them that were invited to the wedding: and they would not come.

Again, he sent forth other servants, saying, Tell them which are invited, Behold, I have prepared my dinner: my oxen and my fatlings are killed, and all things are ready: come to the marriage.

But they made light of it, and went their ways, one to his farm, another to his merchandise: and the remnant took his servants, and treated them spitefully, and killed them.

But when the king heard thereof, he was filled with wrath: and he sent forth his armies, and destroyed those murderers, and burned up their city.

Then said he to his servants, The wedding is ready, but they which were invited were not worthy. Go you therefore into the highways, and as many as you shall find, invite to the marriage.

So those servants went out into the highways, and gathered together all, as many as they found, both bad and good: and the wedding was furnished with guests.

And when the king came in to see the guests, he saw there a man which had not on a wedding garment: And he said to him, Friend, how came you in here not having a wedding garment?

And he was speechless.

Then said the king to the servants, Bind him hand and foot, and take him away, and cast him into outer darkness, there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

For many are called, but few are chosen.

from Matthew chapter 22

And when Jesus was demanded of the Pharisees, when the kingdom of God should come, Jesus answered them and said, The kingdom of God comes not with observation: neither shall they say, Lo here! or, lo there! for, behold, the kingdom of God is within you.

And he said to the disciples, The days will come, when you shall desire to see one of the days of the Son of man, and you shall not see it. And they shall say to you, See here; or, see there: go not after them, nor follow them.

For as the lightning, that lightens out of the one part under heaven, shines to the other part under heaven, so shall also the Son of man be in his day. But first must he suffer many things, and be rejected of this generation.

And as it was in the days of Noah, so shall it be also in the days of the Son of man. They ate, they drank, they married wives, they were given in marriage, until the day that Noah entered into the ark, and the flood came, and destroyed them all.

Likewise also as it was in the days of Lot; they ate, they drank, they bought, they sold, they planted, they built, but the same day that Lot went out of Sodom it rained fire and brimstone from heaven, and destroyed them all.

Even thus shall it be in the day when the Son of man is revealed.

excerpts from Luke chapter 17

Beloved, think it not strange concerning the fiery trial which is to try you, as though some strange thing happened to you: but rejoice, inasmuch as you are partakers of Christ's sufferings; that, when his glory shall be revealed, you may be glad also with exceeding joy.

If you are reproached for the name of Christ, you are blessed, for the spirit of glory and of God rests upon you: on their part he is evil spoken of, but on your part he is glorified.

But let none of you suffer as a murderer, or as a thief, or as an evildoer, or as a busybody in other men's matters. Yet if any man suffer as a Christian, let him not be ashamed; but let him glorify God on this behalf.

For the time is come that judgment must begin at the house of God: and if it first begin at us, what shall the end be of them that obey not the gospel of God? And if the righteous scarcely be saved, where shall the ungodly and the sinner appear?

from 1 Peter chapter 4

Paul writes,

Let this mind be in you, which was also in Christ Jesus: who, being in the form of God, thought it not robbery to be equal with God: but made himself of no reputation, and took upon him the form of a servant, and was made in the likeness of men: and being found in fashion as a man, he humbled himself, and became obedient unto death, even the death of the cross.

Wherefore God also has highly exalted him, and given him a name which is above every name: that at the name of Jesus every knee should bow, of things in heaven, and things in earth, and things under the earth; and that every tongue should confess that Jesus Christ is Lord, to the glory of God the Father.

Wherefore, my beloved, as you have always obeyed, not as in my presence only, but now much more in my absence, work out your own salvation with fear and trembling. For it is God which works in you both to will and to do of his good pleasure.

Do all things without murmurings and disputings: that you may be blameless and harmless, the sons of God, without rebuke, in the midst of a crooked and perverse nation, among whom you shine as lights in the world; holding forth the word of life; that I may rejoice in the day of Christ, that I have not run in vain, neither labored in vain.

from Philippians chapter 2

Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who has blessed us with all spiritual blessings in heavenly places in Christ: according as he has chosen us in him before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy and without blame before him in love.

Having predestinated us to the adoption of children by Jesus Christ to himself, according to the good pleasure of his will, to the praise of the glory of his grace, wherein he has made us accepted in the beloved.

In whom we have redemption through his blood, the forgiveness of sins, according to the riches of his grace; wherein he has abounded toward us in all wisdom and prudence; having made known to us the mystery of his will, according to his good pleasure which he has purposed in himself: that in the dispensation of the fullness of times he might gather together in one all things in Christ, both which are in heaven, and which are on earth; even in him.

In whom also we have obtained an inheritance, being predestinated according to the purpose of him who works all things after the counsel of his own will: that we should be to the praise of his glory, who first trusted in Christ.

In whom you also trusted, after that you heard the word of truth, the gospel of your salvation: in whom also after that you believed, you were sealed with that holy Spirit of promise, which is the earnest of our inheritance until the redemption of the purchased possession, to the praise of his glory.

from Ephesians chapter 1

If it be possible, as much as lies in you, live peaceably with all men.

Dearly beloved, avenge not yourselves, but rather give place to wrath: for it is written, Vengeance is mine; I will repay, says the Lord. Therefore if your enemy hungers, feed him; if he thirsts, give him drink: for in so doing you shall heap coals of fire on his head. Be not overcome of evil, but overcome evil with good.

Let every soul be subject to the higher powers. For there is no power but of God: the powers that be are ordained of God. Whoever therefore resists the power, resists the ordinance of God: and they that resist shall receive to themselves damnation.

For rulers are not a terror to good works, but to the evil. Will you then not be afraid of the power? do that which is good, and you shall have praise of the same: for he is the minister of God to you for good. But if you do that which is evil, be afraid; for he bears not the sword in vain: for he is the minister of God, an avenger to execute wrath upon him that does evil. Therefore you must need be subject, not only for wrath, but also for conscience sake.

For this cause pay you tribute also: for they are God's ministers, attending continually upon this very thing. Render therefore to all their dues: tribute to whom tribute is due; custom to whom custom; fear to whom fear; honor to whom honor. Owe no man anything, but to love one another: for he that loves another has fulfilled the law. Love works no ill to his neighbor: therefore love is the fulfilling of the law.

And that, knowing the time, **that now it is high time to awake out of sleep**: for now is our salvation nearer than when we believed. The night is far spent, the day is at hand: let us therefore cast off the works of darkness, and let us put on the armor of light.

Let us walk honestly, as in the day; not in rioting and drunkenness, not in chambering and wantonness, not in strife and envying. But you **put on the Lord Jesus Christ**, and make not provision for the flesh, to fulfill the lusts thereof.

excerpts from Romans chapters 12 and 13

But of the times and the seasons, brethren, you have no need that I write to you. For yourselves know perfectly that the day of the Lord so comes as a thief in the night. For when they shall say, Peace and safety; then sudden destruction comes upon them, as travail upon a woman with child; and they shall not escape.

But you, brethren, are not in darkness, that that day should overtake you as a thief. You are all the children of light, and the children of the day: we are not of the night, nor of darkness. Therefore **let us not sleep, as do others; but let us watch** and be sober. For they that sleep, sleep in the night; and they that be drunken are drunken in the night. But let us, who are of the day, be sober, putting on the breastplate of faith and love; and for a helmet, the hope of salvation.

For **God has not appointed us to wrath, but to obtain salvation by our Lord Jesus Christ**, who died for us, that, whether we wake or sleep, we should live together with him. Wherefore comfort yourselves together, and build up one another, even as also you do.

And we beseech you, brethren, to know them which labor among you, and are over you in the Lord, and admonish you; and to esteem them very highly in love for their work's sake. And be at peace among yourselves.

Now we exhort you, brethren, warn those that are unruly, comfort the feebleminded, support the weak, be patient toward all men. See that none render evil for evil to any man; but ever follow that which is good, both among yourselves, and to all men. Rejoice evermore. Pray without ceasing. In every thing give thanks: for **this is the will of God in Christ Jesus concerning you.**

Quench not the Spirit. Despise not prophesyings. Prove all things; hold fast that which is good. Abstain from all appearance of evil.

And the very God of peace sanctify you wholly; and I pray God your whole spirit and soul and body be preserved blameless unto the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ. Faithful is he that calls you, who also will do it.

from 1 Thessalonians chapters 4 and 5

I exhort that, first of all, supplications, prayers, intercessions, and giving of thanks, be made for all men; for kings, and for all that are in authority; that we may lead a quiet and peaceable life in all godliness and honesty.

For this is good and acceptable in the sight of God our Savior; who will have all men to be saved, and to come to the knowledge of the truth.

For there is one God, and one mediator between God and men, the man Christ Jesus; who gave himself a ransom for all

from 1 Timothy chapter 2

And Jesus returned in the power of the Spirit into Galilee: and there went out a fame of him through all the region round about. And he taught in their synagogues, being glorified of all.

And he came to Nazareth, where he had been brought up: and, as his custom was, he went into the synagogue on the Sabbath day, and stood up for to read.

And there was delivered to him the book of the prophet Isaiah. And when he had opened the book, he found the place where it was written, The Spirit of the Lord is upon me, because he has anointed me to preach the gospel to the poor; he has sent me to heal the brokenhearted, to preach deliverance to the captives, and recovering of sight to the blind, to set at liberty them that are bruised, to preach the acceptable year of the Lord.

And he closed the book, and he gave it again to the minister, and sat down. And the eyes of all them that were in the synagogue were fastened on him. And he began to say to them, This day this scripture is fulfilled in your ears.

And all bore him witness, and wondered at the gracious words which proceeded out of his mouth.

from Luke chapter 4

And Jesus went about all Galilee, teaching in their synagogues, and preaching the gospel of the kingdom of God, and healing all manner of sickness and all manner of disease among the people.

from Matthew chapter 4

Jesus said to them, Every kingdom divided against itself is brought to desolation; and every city or house divided against itself shall not stand; and if Satan cast out Satan, he is divided against himself; how shall then his kingdom stand?

But if I cast out demons by the Spirit of God, then the kingdom of God is come to you.

Or else how can one enter into a strong man's house, and spoil his goods, except he first bind the strong man? and then he will spoil his house.

excerpts from Matthew chapter 12

*

God has not given us the spirit of fear; but of power, and of love, and of a sound mind.

from 2 Timothy chapter 1

A note from the author:

Did you notice this is also a **has** scripture?

The holy spirit, the spirit of truth, is with us to teach us all things.

In the pages of this book thus far I have shown you scriptures about life and righteousness and the kingdom of God. As you think about matters for yourself, remember God **has** given you a spirit of a sound mind. You can trust God to lead you into all the truth and to give you understanding.

I have found God loves to answer questions. My favorite question is this: God, what is on your heart that you most wish I knew and understood today? I have been amazed at his answers, a few of which I have written about here.

Thank you for listening and considering what I have said. May God richly bless you today.

*

Jesus
Our Savior and Redeemer

Dee Henderson

© copyright 2021 by Dee Henderson. All rights reserved.

Permission is granted to copy any pages of this book for personal use and/or bible study or classroom handout, but not for resale.

Permission is granted for portions of this text to be inserted into another publication so long as they are quoted as written and the author, title and pages are indicated as their source.

All other rights are reserved. No part of this publication may be reproduced, stored in retrieval system, or transmitted in any form or by any means – for example, electronic, photocopy, recording – without the express written permission of the publisher.

Contact the author/publisher:

Dee Henderson
dee@deehenderson.com
www.deehenderson.com

current printing revision: September 23, 2021

KJV: Scripture quotations marked KJV are taken from the King James Version of the bible.

INT: Scripture quotations marked INT are taken from the Interlinear Hebrew-Greek-English Bible, Jay P. Green, Sr. General Editor and Translator, copyright © 1976, 1977, 1980, 1981, 1984, 1985 by Jay Green Sr.

Scriptures not marked by source are from the King James Version (KJV) or the Greek and Hebrew of the Interlinear Hebrew-Greek-English Bible (INT) as worded or punctuated by the author.

Why read this book?

This book looks at two essential things Jesus has done for us.

Jesus is our Savior and Redeemer.

What is salvation? You are saved from your sins.

What is redemption? You live forever and do not see corruption.

Scripture:

Matthew 1:21 you shall call his name JESUS: for he shall save his people from their sins.

Observations:

We are saved from something specific. We are saved from our sins. Why does it matter that we are saved from our sins?

Scripture:

Romans 5:12 by one man sin entered into the world, and death by sin; and so death passed upon all men, for that all have sinned.

Observations:

Death follows sin.

The first man Adam lived an unending life until the day he disobeyed God. Adam sinned and, as a result, he died. Because all Adam's children were born with his nature, all mankind also eventually sinned and died.

Scripture:

Acts 22:16 And now why do you tarry? Arise, and be baptized, and wash away your sins, calling on the name of the Lord.

Mark 16:16 He that believes and is baptized shall be saved.

Observation:

When we see what Jesus has done for us, when we obey and are baptized, our sins are washed away.

Scripture:

2 Timothy 1:10 our Savior Jesus Christ has abolished death, and has brought life and immortality to light through the gospel

Observations:

Jesus saves us from our sins.

Without sin, death has nothing to follow. We now once again have unending physical life.

Life that has no end is immortality.

Consider these six scriptures:

Scripture:

Colossians 1:13 the Father has delivered us from the power of darkness, and **has translated us into the kingdom of his dear Son:** 1:14 in whom we have redemption through his blood, even the forgiveness of sins.

Scripture:

Hebrews 9:12 by his own blood Jesus Christ entered in once into the holy place, having obtained eternal redemption for us.

Scripture:

Psalms 49:6 They that trust in their wealth, and boast themselves in the multitude of their riches, 49:7 none of them can by any means redeem his brother, 49:9 **that he should still live forever, and not see corruption.**

Scripture:

Titus 2:14 our Savior Jesus Christ gave himself for us, that he might redeem us from all iniquity, and purify unto himself a peculiar people, zealous of good works.

Scripture:

John 5:24 [Jesus said,] Truly, Truly, I say unto you, He that hears my word, and believes on him that sent me, has everlasting life, and shall not come into condemnation; but is passed from death unto life.

Scripture:

Isaiah 38:17 thou has in love to my soul delivered it from the pit of corruption: for thou has cast all my sins behind thy back.

Observations:

Redemption is an event. Jesus went to the cross and shed his blood for us. When we are baptized, we accept what Jesus did for us; we receive forgiveness of sins.

Jesus can redeem us because he did not trust in riches or wealth, he trusted and obeyed God. He lived a perfect life without sin. We call on Jesus in baptism to save us, to redeem us, because he is the only one able to save and redeem us.

Eternal redemption means the effects of that redemption last forever. Now redeemed, we live forever and do not see corruption. Now redeemed, we have immortality and incorruptibility. We do not experience disease, infirmity, weakness or death. We do not revert back to being a sinner. We are without sin forever. We are now pure, holy and righteous forever.

We are redeemed by Jesus' blood in baptism.

We are now in the kingdom of God.

These are the free gifts of God to us through Jesus Christ.

Consider these six scriptures:

Scripture:

1 John 5:1 Whosoever believes that Jesus is the Christ is born of God.

Scripture:

1 John 3:9 Whosoever is born of God does not commit sin; for his seed remains in him: and he cannot sin, because he is born of God.

Scripture:

1 John 5:11 God has given to us eternal life, and this life is in his Son. 5:12 He that has the Son has life.

Scripture:

2 John 1:9 He that abides in the doctrine of Christ, he has both the Father and the Son.

Scripture:

Hebrews 5:8 Though Jesus were a Son, yet he learned obedience by the things which he suffered; 5:9 and being made perfect, he became the author of **eternal salvation** unto all them that obey him; 5:10 called of God a high priest after the order of Melchisedec.

Scripture:

Luke 8:11 Now the parable is this: The seed is the word of God.

Observations:

We know from Jesus' explanation of the parable that when he refers to seed, he is speaking about the word of God. It is also correct to say Jesus himself is the seed of God, as he is the offspring of God, the Son of God.

Thus this amazing verse can be read as:

Whosoever is born of God does not commit sin; for the word of God remains in him: and he cannot sin, because he is born of God.

It is the word of God which tells us we are forgiven our sins and we are redeemed, we live forever and we do not see corruption. The word assures us we have an eternal salvation and an eternal redemption.

To sin we would have to become corrupt, we would have to become unrighteous. We cannot sin because we now see who we are. We are forever righteous. We have received the abundance of grace and free gift of righteousness. We now reign in life through Jesus Christ.

Here are some of those scriptures again:

Psalms 49:6 They that trust in their wealth, and boast themselves in the multitude of their riches, 49:7 none of them can by any means redeem his brother, 49:9 that he should still live forever, and not see corruption.

Hebrews 9:12 by his own blood Jesus Christ entered in once into the holy place, having obtained eternal redemption for us.

Titus 2:14 our Savior Jesus Christ gave himself for us, that he might redeem us from all iniquity, and purify unto himself a peculiar people, zealous of good works.

Colossians 1:13 the Father has delivered us from the power of darkness, and has translated us into the kingdom of his dear Son: 1:14 in whom we have redemption through his blood, even the forgiveness of sins.

1 John 5:1 Whosoever believes that Jesus is the Christ is born of God.

1 John 3:9 Whosoever is born of God does not commit sin; for his seed remains in him: and he cannot sin, because he is born of God.

1 John 5:11 God has given to us eternal life, and this life is in his Son. 5:12 He that has the Son has life.

2 John 1:9 He that abides in the doctrine of Christ, he has both the Father and the Son.

Observations:

Saved from our sins, we are forever righteous.

Redeemed, we live forever and do not see corruption. We have immortality and incorruptibility.

God has placed us in the kingdom of his Son Jesus.

This occurs in baptism, when we are forgiven our sins and redeemed by Jesus.

Let's look deeper at what happens when we are baptized and when we take communion.

Consider these four scriptures:

Acts 22:16 And now why do you tarry? Arise, and be baptized, and wash away your sins, calling on the name of the Lord.

Titus 3:5 according to his mercy he saved us, by the washing of regeneration, and renewing of the Holy Spirit; 3:6 which he shed on us abundantly through Jesus Christ our Savior; 3:7 that being justified by his grace, we should be made heirs according to the hope of eternal life.

1 Corinthians 6:11 you are washed, you are sanctified, you are justified in the name of the Lord Jesus, and by the Spirit of our God.

Colossians 1:13 the Father has delivered us from the power of darkness, and has translated us into the kingdom of his dear Son: 1:14 in whom we have redemption through his blood, even the forgiveness of sins.

Observations:

Baptism is regeneration.

The washing away of our sins is the washing of regeneration. In baptism our sins are washed away, we are forgiven our sins, we are redeemed. Redeemed, we live forever and do not see corruption. We have immortality and incorruptibility. We are perfected forever.

Renewing is of the Holy Spirit. The Holy Spirit guides us into all truth. It is the Holy Spirit which teaches us what has occurred during baptism.

Birth is an event. We are born a child of God. We are no longer a man, we are now a child of God. We are born an infant, a babe in Christ. We need to grow and mature. Our growth comes from God. We grow as we are taught by the Holy Spirit what Jesus has done and we obey God.

Scripture:

[Jesus is speaking]

John 6:51 I am the living bread which came down from heaven: if any man eat of this bread, he shall live forever: and the bread that I will give is my flesh, which I will give for the life of the world.

6:53 Truly, Truly, I say unto you, except you eat the flesh of the Son of man, and drink his blood, you have no life in you. 6:54 Whosoever eats my flesh, and drinks my blood, has eternal life; and I will raise him up at the last day.

6:55 For my flesh is meat indeed, and my blood is drink indeed.

6:56 He that eats my flesh, and drinks my blood, dwells in me, and I in him.

6:57 As the living Father has sent me, and I live by the Father: so he that eats me, even he shall live by me.

6:58 This is that bread which came down from heaven: he that eats of this bread shall live forever.

Scripture:

Romans 5:8 But God commended his love toward us, in that, while we were yet sinners, Christ died for us.

5:9 Much more then, being now justified by his blood, we shall be saved from wrath through him. 5:10 For if, when we were enemies, we were reconciled to God by the death of his Son, much more, being reconciled, we shall be saved by his life.

5:11 And not only so, but we also joy in God through our Lord Jesus Christ, by whom we have now received the atonement.

Scripture:

Exodus 29:33 And they shall eat those things wherewith the atonement was made, to consecrate and to sanctify them.

Scripture:

Matthew 26:26 And as they were eating, Jesus took bread, and blessed it, and broke it, and gave it to the disciples, and said, Take, eat; this is my body.

26:27 And he took the cup, and gave thanks, and gave it to them, saying, Drink you all of it; 26:28 for this is my blood of the new testament, which is shed for many for the remission of sins.

Observation:

In communion we partake of the flesh and blood of Jesus. We eat those things by which atonement was made for us, to consecrate and to sanctify us.

Jesus is the lamb of God, without sin, without blemish. Jesus made his body an offering for our sins. Jesus has died for us; Jesus has atoned for us. When we eat of his offering, Jesus abides in us and we in him.

Communion is partaking of the offering by which we are made holy and set apart to be God's people. Communion gives us Jesus; communion gives us life.

With a series of scripture highlights I want to show you how this good news is for the whole world and explore what this good news means for us in practical ways.

now once in the end of the world Jesus has appeared to put away sin by the sacrifice of himself. (Hebrews 9:26)

John saw Jesus coming unto him, and said, Behold the Lamb of God, **which takes away the sin of the world.** (John 1:29)

All unrighteousness is sin (1 John 5:17)

the LORD has laid on him the iniquity of us all (Isaiah 53:6)

he has poured out his soul unto death (Isaiah 53:12)

by his own blood Christ entered in once into the holy place, having obtained eternal redemption for us (Hebrews 9:12)

when Jesus had by himself purged our sins, he sat down on the right hand of the Majesty on high (Hebrews 1:3)

we are sanctified through the offering of the body of Jesus Christ (Hebrews 10:10)

by one offering **he has perfected forever** them that are sanctified. (Hebrews 10:14)

they shall call them, The holy people, The redeemed of the LORD (Isaiah 62:12)

this is the will of God, even your sanctification (1 Thessalonians 4:3)

God has called us unto holiness. (1 Thessalonians 4:7)

God has also given unto us his Holy Spirit. (1 Thessalonians 4:8)

And now why do you tarry? Arise, and be baptized, and wash away your sins, calling on the name of the Lord. (Acts 22:16)

Repent, and be baptized every one of you in the name of Jesus Christ for the remission of sins, and you shall receive the gift of the Holy Spirit. For the promise is unto you, and to your children, and to all that are afar off, even as many as the LORD our God shall call. (Acts 2:38-39)

I am the LORD your God: you shall therefore sanctify yourselves, and you shall be holy; for I am holy (Leviticus 11:44)

I am the LORD that brings you up out of the land of Egypt, to be your God: you shall therefore be holy, for I am holy (Leviticus 11:45)

He that believes and is baptized shall be saved (Mark 16:16)

according to his mercy he saved us, by the washing of regeneration, and renewing of the Holy Spirit; which he shed on us abundantly through Jesus Christ our Savior (Titus 3:5-6)

you are washed, you are sanctified, you are justified in the name of the Lord Jesus, and by the Spirit of our God. (1 Corinthians 6:11)

God has from the beginning chosen you to salvation through sanctification of the Spirit and belief of the truth: whereunto he called you by our gospel, to the obtaining of the glory of our Lord Jesus Christ. (2 Thessalonians 2:13-14)

as many as received Jesus, to them he gave power to become the sons of God, even to them that believe on his name: who were born of God. (John 1:12-13)

I have said, You are gods; and all of you are children of the most High. (Psalms 82:6)

For the Son of man is not come to destroy men's lives, but to save them. (Luke 9:56)

both he that sanctifies and they who are sanctified are all of one: for which cause Jesus is not ashamed to call them brethren, saying, I will declare thy name unto my brethren, in the midst of the church I will sing praise unto thee. And again, Behold I and the children which God has given me. (Hebrews 2:11-13)

I have not concealed thy lovingkindness and thy truth from the great congregation (Psalms 40:10)

I have preached righteousness in the great congregation (Psalms 40:9)

I have declared thy faithfulness and thy salvation (Psalms 40:10)

the LORD takes pleasure in his people: he will beautify the meek with salvation. (Psalms 149:4)

Blessed are the meek: for they shall inherit the earth. (Matthew 5:5)

the meek shall inherit the earth; and shall delight themselves in the abundance of peace. (Psalms 37:11)

The righteous shall inherit the land, and dwell therein forever. (Psalms 37:29)

The LORD will give strength unto his people; the LORD will bless his people with peace. (Psalms 29:11)

The thoughts of the righteous are right (Proverbs 12:5)

The desire of the righteous is only good (Proverbs 11:23)

He that speaks truth shows forth righteousness (Proverbs 12:17)

Sanctify them through thy truth: thy word is truth. (John 17:17)

if any man be in Christ, he is a new creature: old things are passed away; behold, all things are become new. And all things are of God, who has reconciled us to himself by Jesus Christ (2 Corinthians 5:17-18)

It is God that girds me with strength, and makes my way perfect. (Psalms 18:32)

Now our Lord Jesus Christ himself, and God, even our Father, comfort your hearts, and establish you in every good word and work. the Lord is faithful, who shall establish you, and keep you from evil. (2 Thessalonians 2:16-17,3:3)

no evil shall happen to the just (Proverbs 12:21)

In the way of righteousness is life: and in the pathway thereof there is no death. (Proverbs 12:28)

the gift of God is eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord. (Romans 6:23)

Truly, Truly, I say unto you, If a man keep my saying, he shall never see death. (John 8:51)

I delight to do thy will, O my God: yea, thy law is within my heart. (Psalms 40:8)

And he that sat upon the throne said, Behold, I make all things new. And he said unto me, Write: for these words are true and faithful. And he said unto me, It is done. I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end. **I will give unto him that is thirsty of the fountain of the water of life freely.** (Revelation 21:5-6)

I want to look next at the change which happens in our hearts.

Scripture:

Matthew 9:2 And, behold, they brought to him a man sick of the palsy, lying on a bed: and Jesus seeing their faith said unto the sick of the palsy; **Son, be of good cheer; thy sins be forgiven thee.**

9:3 And, behold, certain of the scribes said within themselves, This man blasphemeth.

9:4 **And Jesus knowing their thoughts said, Wherefore think you evil in your hearts?** 9:5 For whether is easier, to say, Thy sins be forgiven thee; or to say, Arise, and walk?

9:6 But that you may know that the Son of man has power on earth to forgive sins, (then said he to the sick of the palsy,) Arise, take up thy bed, and go unto thine house.

9:7 And he arose, and departed to his house.

9:8 But when the multitudes saw it, they marveled, and glorified God, which had given such power unto men.

Observation:

We think in our hearts. Our thoughts are in our hearts. Our heart is our mind.

Scripture:

Galatians 3:26 you are all the children of God by faith in Christ Jesus. 3:27 For as many of you as have been baptized into Christ have put on Christ.

3:28 There is neither Jew nor Greek, there is neither bond nor free, there is neither male nor female: for you are all one in Christ Jesus.

3:29 And if you be Christ's, then are you Abraham's seed, and heirs according to the promise.

4:1 Now I say, That the heir, as long as he is a child, differs nothing from a servant, though he be lord of all; 4:2 But is under tutors and governors until the time appointed of the father.

4:3 Even so we, when we were children, were in bondage under the elements of the world: 4:4 But when the fullness of the time was come, God sent forth his Son, made of a woman, made under the law, 4:5 To redeem them that were under the law, that we might receive the adoption of sons.

4:6 And **because you are sons, God has sent forth the Spirit of his Son into your hearts**, crying, Abba, Father.

4:7 Wherefore thou art no more a servant, but a son; and if a son, then a heir of God through Christ.

Observations:

We have a heavenly Father who has sent forth the spirit of Jesus into our hearts. We now have good hearts.

Scripture:

Hebrews 8:10 I will put my laws into their mind, and write them in their hearts: and I will be to them a God, and they shall be to me a people: 8:11 And they shall not teach every man his neighbor, and every man his brother, saying, Know the Lord: for all shall know me, from the least to the greatest. 8:12 For I will be merciful to their unrighteousness, and their sins and their iniquities will I remember no more.

Scripture:

Romans 5:5 the love of God is shed abroad in our hearts by the Holy Spirit which is given unto us.

Scripture:

1 John 4:8 God is love.

4:9 In this was manifested the love of God toward us, because that God sent his only begotten Son into the world, that we might live through him. 4:10 God loved us, and sent his Son to be the propitiation for our sins.

4:11 Beloved, if God so loved us, we ought also to love one another. 4:12 If we love one another, God dwells in us, and his love is perfected in us.

4:13 Hereby know we that we dwell in him, and he in us, because he has given us of his Spirit. 4:14 And we have seen and do testify that the Father sent the Son to be the Savior of the world.

4:15 Whosoever shall confess that Jesus is the Son of God, God dwells in him, and he in God. 4:16 And we have known and believed the love that God has to us. God is love; and he that dwells in love dwells in God, and God in him.

Observations:

God dwells in us. God is love. The love of God is shed abroad in our hearts. God is dwelling in our hearts. In our heart we think good thoughts. From our heart we bring forth good.

When we love one another, we give evidence that God is dwelling in our hearts, we show forth God who is love.

Scripture:

2 Corinthians 5:17 if any man be in Christ, he is a new creature: old things are passed away; behold, all things are become new. 5:18 And all things are of God, who has reconciled us to himself by Jesus Christ, and has given to us the ministry of reconciliation;

5:19 To wit, that God was in Christ, reconciling the world unto himself, not imputing their trespasses unto them; and has committed unto us the word of reconciliation. 5:20 Now then we are ambassadors for Christ, as though God did beseech you by us: we pray you in Christ's stead, be you reconciled to God.

5:21 For he has made him to be sin for us, who knew no sin; that we might be made the righteousness of God in him.

Observations:

We are perfected forever and righteous forever because God dwells in our hearts. We are entirely new.

Scripture:

Ezekiel 18:27 when the wicked man turns away from his wickedness that he has committed, and does that which is lawful and right, he shall save his soul alive. 18:28 Because he considers, and turns away from all his transgressions that he has committed, he shall surely live, he shall not die.

18:30 I will judge you, O house of Israel, every one according to his ways, says the Lord GOD. Repent, and turn yourselves from all your transgressions; so iniquity shall not be your ruin.

18:31 **Cast away from you all your transgressions,** whereby you have transgressed; **and make you a new heart and a new spirit:** for why will you die, O house of Israel? 18:32 For I have no pleasure in the death of him that dies, says the Lord GOD: wherefore turn yourselves, and live.

Scripture:

Isaiah 55:6 Seek you the LORD while he may be found, call you upon him while he is near: 55:7 Let the wicked forsake his way, and the unrighteous man his thoughts: and let him return unto the LORD, and he will have mercy upon him; and to our God, for he will abundantly pardon.

55:8 For my thoughts are not your thoughts, neither are your ways my ways, says the LORD.

55:9 For as the heavens are higher than the earth, so are my ways higher than your ways, and my thoughts than your thoughts.

55:10 For as the rain comes down, and the snow from heaven, and returns not thither, but waters the earth, and makes it bring forth and bud, that it may give seed to the sower, and bread to the eater: 55:11 So shall my word be that goes forth out of my mouth: it shall not return unto me void, but it shall accomplish that which I please, and it shall prosper in the thing whereto I sent it.

Observations:

When we are sinners, we are unrighteous with unrighteous thoughts. We hear about Jesus. We see Jesus is the Son of God who is able to save us from our sins. We forsake wickedness and our unrighteous thoughts. We repent from our sins and are baptized. We receive a new heart and new spirit which are from God. We are now righteous and we think righteous thoughts. Jesus saves us by lifting us up. Jesus raises us up. Our thoughts are lifted up to be the thoughts of God. We are made one with God.

Scripture:

Ephesians 5:25 Christ loved the church and gave himself for it; 5:26 that he might sanctify and cleanse it with the washing of water by the word, 5:27 that he might present it to himself a glorious church, not having spot, or wrinkle, or any such thing; but that it should be holy and without blemish.

5:23 Christ is the head of the church: and he is the Savior of the body.

5:29 the Lord nourishes and cherishes the church: 5:30 for we are members of his body, of his flesh, and of his bones.

Scripture:

Ephesians 2:4 God, who is rich in mercy, for his great love wherewith he loved us, 2:5 even when we were dead in sins, has quickened us together with Christ, (by grace you are saved;) 2:6 and has raised us up together, and made us sit together in heavenly places in Christ Jesus: 2:7 that in the ages to come he might show the exceeding riches of his grace in his kindness toward us through Christ Jesus.

Scripture:

Jeremiah 9:24 let him that glories glory in this, that he understands and knows me, that I am the LORD which exercise lovingkindness, judgment, and righteousness, in the earth: for in these things I delight, says the LORD.

Scripture:

Deuteronomy 30:6 the LORD thy God will circumcise thine heart, and the heart of thy seed, to love the LORD thy God with all thine heart, and with all thy soul, that thou may live.

Scripture:

Colossians 2:6 As you have therefore received Christ Jesus the Lord, so walk you in him: 2:7 Rooted and built up in him, and established in the faith, as you have been taught, abounding therein with thanksgiving.

2:10 **you are complete in him**, which is the head of all principality and power: 2:11 in whom also you are circumcised with the circumcision made without hands, in putting off the body of the sins of the flesh by the circumcision of Christ:

2:12 **Buried with him in baptism, wherein also you are risen with him** through the faith of the operation of God, who has raised him from the dead.

2:13 And you he has quickened together with him, having forgiven you all trespasses

Scripture:

Colossians 1:26 **the mystery** which has been hid from ages and from generations, **now is made manifest to his saints**: 1:27 to whom God would make known what is the riches of the glory of this mystery among the Gentiles; **which is Christ in you**, the hope of glory:

1:28 whom we preach, warning every man, and teaching every man in all wisdom; **that we may present every man perfect in Christ Jesus**

Scripture:

Luke 1:68 **Blessed be the Lord God of Israel; for he has visited and redeemed his people**, 1:69 And has raised up a horn of salvation for us in the house of his servant David; 1:70 As he spoke by the mouth of his holy prophets, which have been since the world began: 1:71 That we should be saved from our enemies, and from the hand of all that hate us; 1:72 To perform the mercy promised to our fathers, and to remember his holy covenant; 1:73 The oath which he swore to our father Abraham, 1:74 That he would grant unto us, that we being delivered out of the hand of our enemies might serve him without fear, 1:75 **in holiness and righteousness** before him, all the days of our life.

Scripture:

Psalms 132:9 **Let thy priests be clothed with righteousness**; and let thy saints shout for joy.

132:13 For the LORD has chosen Zion; he has desired it for his habitation.

132:14 This is my rest forever: here will I dwell; for I have desired it.

132:15 I will abundantly bless her provision: I will satisfy her poor with bread.

132:16 **I will also clothe her priests with salvation**: and her saints shall shout aloud for joy.

Observation:

What is salvation? Righteousness.

Scripture:

Romans 10:8 The word is nigh thee, even in thy mouth, and in thy heart: that is, the word of faith, which we preach; 10:9 That if thou shalt confess with thy mouth the Lord Jesus, and shall believe in thine heart that God has raised him from the dead, thou shalt be saved.

10:10 For with the heart man believes unto **righteousness**; and with the mouth confession is made unto **salvation**.

10:11 For the scripture said, Whosoever believes on him shall not be ashamed.

10:12 For there is no difference between the Jew and the Greek: for the same Lord over all is rich unto all that call upon him.

10:13 For whosoever shall call upon the name of the Lord shall be saved.

Scripture:

Matthew 5:5 Blessed are the meek: for they shall inherit the earth.

Psalms 37:29 The righteous shall inherit the land, and dwell therein forever.

Observation:

Who are the meek? The righteous.

There are many cautions Jesus gives to us about our life in the kingdom of God. It is important to listen carefully to these scriptures and do what Jesus instructs.

[Jesus is speaking.]

Matthew 6:24 No man can serve two masters: for either he will hate the one, and love the other; or else he will hold to the one, and despise the other. You cannot serve God and mammon.

6:25 Therefore I say unto you, Take no thought for your life, what you shall eat, or what you shall drink; nor yet for your body, what you shall put on. Is not the life more than meat, and the body than raiment?

6:26 Behold the fowls of the air: for they sow not, neither do they reap, nor gather into barns; yet your heavenly Father feeds them. Are you not much better than they?

6:27 Which of you by taking thought can add one cubit unto his stature?

6:28 And why take you thought for raiment? Consider the lilies of the field, how they grow; they toil not, neither do they spin: 6:29 And yet I say unto you, That even Solomon in all his glory was not arrayed like one of these.

6:30 Wherefore, if God so clothe the grass of the field, which today is, and tomorrow is cast into the oven, shall he not much more clothe you, O you of little faith?

6:31 Therefore take no thought, saying, What shall we eat? or, What shall we drink? or, Wherewithal shall we be clothed? 6:32 (For after all these things do the Gentiles seek:) for your heavenly Father knows that you have need of all these things.

6:33 But **seek you first the kingdom of God and his righteousness**; and all these things shall be added unto you.

Scripture:

[Jesus is speaking.]

Luke 12:29 seek you not what you shall eat, or what you shall drink, neither be you of doubtful mind. 12:30 For all these things do the nations of the world seek after: and your Father knows that you have need of these things.

12:31 But rather seek you the kingdom of God; and all these things shall be added unto you.

12:32 Fear not, little flock; for it is your Father's good pleasure to give you the kingdom.

12:33 Sell that you have, and give alms; provide yourselves bags which wax not old, a treasure in the heavens that fails not, where no thief approaches, neither moth corrupts.

12:34 For where your treasure is, there will your heart be also.

Observations:

What is mammon? An unrighteous spirit associated with money, exhibiting itself in a love of money and in covetousness, desiring what our neighbor has, and lusting for more.

We are to seek first the kingdom of God and his righteousness.

God's righteousness is to be without sin. God is without sin. God has never sinned.

Scripture:

[Jesus is speaking.]

Luke 16:10 He that is faithful in that which is least is faithful also in much: and he that is unjust in the least is unjust also in much.

16:11 If therefore you have not been faithful in the unrighteous mammon, who will commit to your trust the true riches? 16:12 And if you have not been faithful in that which is another man's, who shall give you that which is your own?

16:13 No servant can serve two masters: for either he will hate the one, and love the other; or else he will hold to the one, and despise the other. **You cannot serve God and mammon.**

16:14 And **the Pharisees** also, **who were covetous**, heard all these things: and **they derided him**.

16:15 And he said unto them, You are they which justify yourselves before men; but **God knows your hearts**: for that which is highly esteemed among men is abomination in the sight of God.

Scripture:

Mark 10:17 And when he was gone forth into the way, there came one running, and kneeled to him, and asked him, **Good Master, what shall I do that I may inherit eternal life?** 10:18 And Jesus said unto him, Why callest thou me good? there is none good but one, that is, God.

10:19 Thou know the commandments, Do not commit adultery, Do not kill, Do not steal, Do not bear false witness, Defraud not, Honor thy father and mother. 10:20 And he answered and said unto him, Master, all these have I observed from my youth.

10:21 Then Jesus beholding him loved him, and said unto him, One thing thou lackest: go thy way, sell whatsoever thou has, and give to the poor, and thou shalt have treasure in heaven: and come, take up the cross, and follow me.

10:22 And he was sad at that saying, and went away grieved: for he had great possessions.

10:23 And Jesus looked round about, and said unto his disciples, How hardly shall they that have riches **enter into the kingdom of God!** 10:24 And the disciples were astonished at his words. But Jesus answereth again, and said unto them, Children, how hard is it for them that trust in riches to enter into the kingdom of God! 10:25 It is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle, than for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of God.

10:26 And they were astonished out of measure, saying among themselves, Who then can be saved? 10:27 And Jesus looking upon them said, With men it is impossible, but not with God: for with God all things are possible.

Observation:

Inheriting eternal life is entering into the kingdom of God.

Scripture:

Mark 9:43 And if thy hand offend thee, cut it off: it is better for thee **to enter into life** maimed, than having two hands to go into hell, into the fire that never shall be quenched: 9:44 Where their worm dies not, and the fire is not quenched.

9:45 And if thy foot offend thee, cut it off: it is better for thee **to enter** halt **into life**, than having two feet to be cast into hell, into the fire that never shall be quenched: 9:46 Where their worm dies not, and the fire is not quenched.

9:47 And if thine eye offend thee, pluck it out: it is better for thee **to enter into the kingdom of God** with one eye, than having two eyes to be cast into hell fire: 9:48 Where their worm dies not, and the fire is not quenched.

Observations:

We enter into life.

We enter into the kingdom of God.

Scripture:

Luke 9:38 And John answered him, saying, Master, we saw one casting out devils in thy name, and he follows not us: and we forbad him, because he follows not us.

9:39 But Jesus said, Forbid him not: for there is no man which shall do a miracle in my name, that can lightly speak evil of me.

Scripture:

Matthew 7:21 **Not everyone that said unto me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that does the will of my Father which is in heaven.**

7:22 **Many** will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in thy name? and in thy name have cast out devils? and in thy name done many wonderful works?

7:23 And then will I profess unto them, I never knew you: depart from me, you that work iniquity.

Scripture:

Matthew 12:46 While he yet talked to the people, behold, his mother and his brethren stood without, desiring to speak with him.

12:47 Then one said unto him, Behold, thy mother and thy brethren stand without, desiring to speak with thee.

12:48 But he answered and said unto him that told him, Who is my mother? and who are my brethren? 12:49 And he stretched forth his hand toward **his disciples**, and said, Behold my mother and my brethren! 12:50 **For whosoever shall do the will of my Father which is in heaven, the same is my brother, and sister, and mother.**

Scripture:

Luke 9:28 And it came to pass about an eight days after these sayings, he took Peter and John and James, and went up into a mountain to pray.

9:29 And as he prayed, the fashion of his countenance was altered, and his raiment was white and glistering.

9:30 And, behold, there talked with him two men, which were Moses and Elijah: 9:31 Who appeared in glory, and spoke of his exodus which he should accomplish at Jerusalem.

9:32 But Peter and they that were with him were heavy with sleep: and when they were awake, they saw his glory, and the two men that stood with him.

9:33 And it came to pass, as they departed from him, Peter said unto Jesus, Master, it is good for us to be here: and let us make three tabernacles; one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elijah: not knowing what he said.

9:34 While he thus spoke, there came a cloud, and overshadowed them: and they feared as they entered into the cloud.

9:35 And there came a voice out of the cloud, saying, This is my beloved Son: hear him.

9:36 And when the voice was past, Jesus was found alone.

Scripture:

Luke 10:38 Now it came to pass, as they went, that he entered into a certain village: and a certain woman named Martha received him into her house.

10:39 And she had a sister called **Mary, which also sat at Jesus' feet, and heard his word.**

10:40 But Martha was cumbered about much serving, and came to him, and said, Lord, do thou not care that my sister has left me to serve alone? bid her therefore that she help me.

10:41 And Jesus answered and said unto her, Martha, Martha, thou art careful and troubled about many things:
10:42 But **one thing is needful: and Mary has chosen that good part, which shall not be taken away from her.**

Scripture:

John 8:28 Then said Jesus unto them, When you have lifted up the Son of man, then shall you know that I am he, and that I do nothing of myself; but as my Father has taught me, I speak these things.

8:29 And he that sent me is with me: the Father has not left me alone; for I do always those things that please him.

8:30 As he spoke these words, many believed on him.

8:31 Then said Jesus to those Jews which believed on him, **If you continue in my word, then are you my disciples indeed; 8:32 And you shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free.**

8:33 They answered him, We be Abraham's seed, and were never in bondage to any man: how says thou, You shall be made free?

8:34 Jesus answered them, Truly, Truly, I say unto you, whosoever commits sin is the servant of sin.

8:35 And the servant abides not in the house forever: but the Son abides forever.

8:36 If the Son therefore shall make you free, you shall be free indeed.

Observations:

What is the kingdom of God? Eternal life.

Who enters into the kingdom of God? Those that do the will of the Father in heaven.

What is the Father's will? That we hear Jesus.

Who does the will of the Father? A disciple.

Not all believers are disciples. If you (a believer) continue in my word, then you are my disciples.

What does the son make us free from? Sin.

What does our life look like in the kingdom of God? How do we grow? Let's explore these questions plus a few other interesting scripture passages to conclude this book.

Scripture:

Mark 2:16 And when the scribes and Pharisees saw Jesus eat with publicans and sinners, they said unto his disciples, How is it that he eats and drinks with publicans and sinners? 2:17 When Jesus heard it, he said unto them, They that are whole have no need of the physician, but they that are sick: I came not to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance.

Observation:

The righteous are whole and have no need of a physician.

Sinners are sick and Jesus calls them to repentance.

Jesus came to save sinners, to forgive sins, to heal the sick, to make us righteous and whole.

Scripture:

Matthew 9:2 And, behold, they brought to him a man sick of the palsy, lying on a bed: and Jesus seeing their faith said unto the sick of the palsy; **Son, be of good cheer; thy sins be forgiven thee.**

9:3 And, behold, certain of the scribes said within themselves, This man blasphemeth.

9:4 And Jesus knowing their thoughts said, Wherefore think you evil in your hearts? 9:5 For whether is easier, to say, Thy sins be forgiven thee; or to say, Arise, and walk?

9:6 But that you may know that the Son of man has power on earth to forgive sins, (then said he to the sick of the palsy,) Arise, take up thy bed, and go unto thine house.

9:7 And he arose, and departed to his house.

9:8 But when the multitudes saw it, they marveled, and glorified God, which had given such power unto men.

Scripture:

Mark 6:56 And whithersoever he entered, into villages, or cities, or country, they laid the sick in the streets, and besought him that they might touch if it were but the border of his garment: and as many as touched him were **made whole.**

Scripture:

Mark 5:25 And a certain woman, which had an issue of blood twelve years, 5:26 And had suffered many things of many physicians, and had spent all that she had, and was nothing bettered, but rather grew worse, 5:27 When she had heard of Jesus, came in the press behind, and touched his garment.

5:28 For she said, If I may touch but his clothes, I shall be whole.

5:29 And straightway the fountain of her blood was dried up; and she felt in her body that **she was healed** of that plague.

5:30 And Jesus, immediately knowing in himself that **virtue** had gone out of him, turned him about in the press, and said, Who touched my clothes? 5:31 And his disciples said unto him, Thou sees the multitude thronging thee, and says thou, Who touched me? 5:32 And he looked round about to see her that had done this thing.

5:33 But the woman fearing and trembling, knowing what was done in her, came and fell down before him, and told him all the truth.

5:34 And he said unto her, **Daughter, thy faith has made thee whole**; go in peace, and be whole of thy plague.

Scripture:

Luke 8:43 And a woman having an issue of blood twelve years, which had spent all her living upon physicians, neither could be healed of any, 8:44 Came behind him, and touched the border of his garment: and immediately her issue of blood stanchèd.

8:45 And Jesus said, Who touched me? When all denied, Peter and they that were with him said, Master, the multitude throng thee and press thee, and says thou, Who touched me? 8:46 And Jesus said, Somebody has touched me: for I perceive that **virtue** is gone out of me.

8:47 And when the woman saw that she was not hid, she came trembling, and falling down before him, she declared unto him before all the people for what cause she had touched him, and how **she was healed immediately**.

8:48 And he said unto her, Daughter, be of good comfort: thy faith **has made thee whole**; go in peace.

8:49 While he yet spoke, there comes one from the ruler of the synagogue's house, saying to him, Thy daughter is dead; trouble not the Master.

8:50 But when Jesus heard it, he answered him, saying, Fear not: believe only, and she shall be **made whole**.

8:51 And when he came into the house, he suffered no man to go in, save Peter, and James, and John, and the father and the mother of the maiden.

8:52 And all wept, and bewailed her: but he said, Weep not; **she is not dead, but sleeps**.

8:53 And they laughed him to scorn, knowing that she was dead.

8:54 And he put them all out, and took her by the hand, and called, saying, Maid, arise.

8:55 **And her spirit came again, and she arose straightway**: and he commanded to give her meat.

8:56 And her parents were astonished: but he charged them that they should tell no man what was done.

9:1 Then he called his twelve disciples together, and gave them power and authority over all devils, and to cure diseases.

9:2 And he sent them to preach the kingdom of God, and to heal the sick.

Observations:

To be made whole is to be made healthy.

To be made whole is to be made alive.

Jesus is giving people the kingdom of God.

The righteous are whole.

Thy faith – thy faith in me being the Savior – has saved thee. I have forgiven your sins. Go in peace. I have made you whole.

Scripture:

1 Corinthians 11:23 For I have received of the Lord that which also I delivered unto you, That the Lord Jesus the same night in which he was betrayed took bread: 11:24 And when he had given thanks, he brake it, and said, Take, eat: this is my body, which is broken for you: this do in remembrance of me.

11:25 After the same manner also he took the cup, when he had supped, saying, This cup is the new testament in my blood: this do you, as oft as you drink it, in remembrance of me.

11:26 For as often as you eat this bread, and drink this cup, you do show the Lord's death till he come.

11:27 Wherefore whosoever shall eat this bread, and drink this cup of the Lord, unworthily, shall be guilty of the body and blood of the Lord.

11:28 But **let a man examine himself**, and so let him eat of that bread, and drink of that cup.

11:29 For he that eats and drinks unworthily, eats and drinks damnation to himself, **not discerning the Lord's body**.

11:30 For this cause many are weak and sickly among you, and many sleep.

11:31 For if we would judge ourselves, we should not be judged.

11:32 But when we are judged, we are chastened of the Lord, that we should not be condemned with the world.

Scripture:

2 Corinthians 13:5 **Examine yourselves, whether you be in the faith;** prove your own selves. **Know you not your own selves, how that Jesus Christ is in you,** except you be reprobates?

Observations: Many believers are weak, sick, and many sleep (die) because they do not discern the body of Christ.

What are they not discerning? That Jesus is the Lamb of God. God placed all our sins upon Jesus, and Jesus offered up his body as a sacrifice for those sins. The offering of the body of Christ has accomplished a specific outcome: we have been sanctified, made holy, forever. The offering of the body of Christ is once for all time. Jesus has made us righteous forever.

Death follows sin. If you take communion and leave communion still thinking you are a sinner, or one who still sins and has to repent, you are judging yourself to still be a sinner and death follows sin; you will get weak, sick and sleep (die).

You are not recognizing what Jesus did for you, or you are not believing what Jesus did for you. You are judging yourself to be still be a sinner. You do not believe you are righteous.

Jesus has atoned for us. We eat the sacrifice by which atonement was made for us. And it is finished forever. We are reconciled to God. We have returned to the Father through Jesus Christ.

We receive Jesus dwelling in us and thus we receive life. He that eats my flesh, and drinks my blood, dwells in me, and I in him. He that has the Son has life. God has given to us eternal life, and this life is in his Son.

We have been redeemed. We have immortality and incorruptibility. We are in the kingdom of God. God has saved us through Jesus and has perfected us forever.

What we need to see is what Jesus has done for us. Our life and our strength and our health are sound forever because we are righteous, saved by grace, through faith in what Jesus has done for us. Jesus has taken away our sins and made us righteous through the offering of his body on the cross. His work on our behalf has saved us forever.

Scripture:

Luke 7:36 And one of the Pharisees desired him that he would eat with him. And he went into the Pharisee's house, and sat down to meat.

7:37 And, behold, a woman in the city, which was a sinner, when she knew that Jesus sat at meat in the Pharisee's house, brought an alabaster box of ointment, 7:38 And stood at his feet behind him weeping, and began to wash his feet with tears, and did wipe them with the hairs of her head, and kissed his feet, and anointed them with the ointment.

7:39 Now when the Pharisee which had bidden him saw it, he spoke within himself, saying, This man, if he were a prophet, would have known who and what manner of woman this is that toucheth him: for she is a sinner.

7:40 And Jesus answering said unto him, Simon, I have somewhat to say unto thee. And he said, Master, say on.

7:41 There was a certain creditor which had two debtors: the one owed five hundred pence, and the other fifty.

7:42 And when they had nothing to pay, he frankly forgave them both. Tell me therefore, which of them will love him most?

7:43 Simon answered and said, I suppose that he, to whom he forgave most.

And he said unto him, Thou has rightly judged.

7:44 And he turned to the woman, and said unto Simon, See thou this woman? I entered into thine house, thou gave me no water for my feet: but she has washed my feet with tears, and wiped them with the hairs of her head.

7:45 Thou gave me no kiss: but this woman since the time I came in has not ceased to kiss my feet.

7:46 My head with oil thou didst not anoint: but this woman has anointed my feet with ointment.

7:47 Wherefore I say unto thee, **Her sins, which are many, are forgiven; for she loved much:** but to whom little is forgiven, the same loves little.

7:48 **And he said unto her, Thy sins are forgiven.**

7:49 And they that sat at meat with him began to say within themselves, Who is this that forgiveth sins also?

7:50 And he said to the woman, **Thy faith has saved thee; go in peace.**

Observations:

Thy faith – thy faith in me being the Savior – has saved thee. I have forgiven your sins. Go in peace.

Scripture:

Luke 7:20 When the men were come unto Jesus, they said, John the Baptist has sent us unto thee, saying, Art thou he that should come? or look we for another?

7:21 And in that same hour he cured many of their infirmities and plagues, and of evil spirits; and unto many that were blind he gave sight.

7:22 Then Jesus answering said unto them, Go your way, and tell John what things you have seen and heard; how that the blind see, the lame walk, the lepers are cleansed, the deaf hear, the dead are raised, to the poor the gospel is preached. 7:23 And blessed is he, whosoever shall not be offended in me.

Scripture:

Luke 6:40 The disciple is not above his master: but **everyone that is perfect shall be as his master.**

Scripture:

Hebrews 10:10 **we are sanctified** through the offering of the body of Jesus Christ

Scripture:

Hebrews 10:14 by one offering **he has perfected forever** them that are sanctified.

Scripture:

[the day of the resurrection]

John 20:19 Then the same day at evening, being the first day of the week, when the doors were shut where the disciples were assembled for fear of the Jews, came Jesus and stood in the midst, and said unto them, **Peace be unto you.**

20:20 And when he had so said, he showed unto them his hands and his side.

Then were the disciples glad, when they saw the LORD.

20:21 Then said Jesus to them again, **Peace be unto you: as my Father has sent me, even so send I you.**

20:22 And when he had said this, he breathed on them, and said unto them, Receive you the Holy Spirit: 20:23 **Whosoever sins you remit, they are remitted unto them;** and whosoever sins you retain, they are retained.

Scripture:

John 14:12 Truly, Truly, I say unto you, **He that believes on me, the works that I do shall he do also; and greater works than these shall he do; because I go unto my Father.**

14:13 And whatsoever you shall ask in my name, that will I do, that the Father may be glorified in the Son. 14:14 If you shall ask anything in my name, I will do it.

14:15 If you love me, keep my commandments.

Scripture:

Acts 9:10 And there was a certain disciple at Damascus, named Ananias; and to him said the Lord in a vision, Ananias. And he said, Behold, I am here, Lord.

9:11 And the Lord said unto him, Arise, and go into the street which is called Straight, and enquire in the house of Judas for one called Saul, of Tarsus: for, behold, he prays, 9:12 and has seen in a vision a man named Ananias coming in, and putting his hand on him, that he might receive his sight.

9:13 Then Ananias answered, Lord, I have heard by many of this man, how much evil he has done to thy saints at Jerusalem: 9:14 And here he has authority from the chief priests to bind all that call on thy name.

9:15 But the Lord said unto him, Go thy way: for he is a chosen vessel unto me, to bear my name before the Gentiles, and kings, and the children of Israel: 9:16 For I will show him how great things he must suffer for my name's sake.

9:17 And Ananias went his way, and entered into the house; and putting his hands on him said, Brother Saul, the Lord, even Jesus, that appeared unto thee in the way as thou came, has sent me, that thou might receive thy sight, and be filled with the Holy Spirit.

9:18 And immediately there fell from his eyes as it had been scales: and he received sight forthwith, and arose, and was baptized.

9:19 And when he had received meat, he was strengthened. Then was Saul certain days with the disciples which were at Damascus.

9:20 And straightway he preached Christ in the synagogues, that he is the Son of God.

9:21 But all that heard him were amazed, and said; Is not this he that destroyed them which called on this name in

Jerusalem, and came hither for that intent, that he might bring them bound unto the chief priests? 9:22 But Saul increased the more in strength, and confounded the Jews which dwelt at Damascus, proving that this is very Christ.

9:23 And after that many days were fulfilled, the Jews took counsel to kill him: 9:24 But their laying await was known of Saul. And they watched the gates day and night to kill him.

9:25 Then the disciples took him by night, and let him down by the wall in a basket.

9:26 And when Saul was come to Jerusalem, he assayed to join himself to the disciples: but they were all afraid of him, and believed not that he was a disciple.

9:27 But Barnabas took him, and brought him to the apostles, and declared unto them how he had seen the Lord in the way, and that he had spoken to him, and how he had preached boldly at Damascus in the name of Jesus.

9:28 And he was with them coming in and going out at Jerusalem.

9:29 And he spoke boldly in the name of the Lord Jesus, and disputed against the Grecians: but they went about to slay him.

9:30 Which when the brethren knew, they brought him down to Caesarea, and sent him forth to Tarsus.

9:31 Then had the churches rest throughout all Judaea and Galilee and Samaria, and were edified; and walking in the fear of the Lord, and in the comfort of the Holy Spirit, were multiplied.

9:32 And it came to pass, as Peter passed throughout all quarters, he came down also to the saints which dwelt at Lydda.

9:33 And there he found a certain man named Aeneas, which had kept his bed eight years, and was **sick of the**

palsy.

9:34 And Peter said unto him, Aeneas, Jesus Christ makes thee whole: arise, and make thy bed. And he arose immediately.

9:35 And all that dwelt at Lydda and Saron saw him, and turned to the Lord.

9:36 Now there was at Joppa a certain disciple named Tabitha, which by interpretation is called Dorcas: this woman was full of good works and almsdeeds which she did.

9:37 And it came to pass in those days, that she was sick, and died: whom when they had washed, they laid her in an upper chamber.

9:38 And forasmuch as Lydda was nigh to Joppa, and the disciples had heard that Peter was there, they sent unto him two men, desiring him that he would not delay to come to them.

9:39 Then Peter arose and went with them. When he was come, they brought him into the upper chamber: and all the widows stood by him weeping, and shewing the coats and garments which Dorcas made, while she was with them.

9:40 But Peter put them all forth, and kneeled down, and prayed; and turning him to the body said, Tabitha, arise. And she opened her eyes: and when she saw Peter, she sat up.

9:41 And he gave her his hand, and lifted her up, and when he had called the saints and widows, **presented her alive.**

9:42 And it was known throughout all Joppa; and many believed in the Lord.

9:43 And it came to pass, that he tarried many days in Joppa with one Simon a tanner.

10:1 There was a certain man in Caesarea called Cornelius, a centurion of the band called the Italian band,
10:2 **A devout man, and one that feared God with all his house, which gave much alms to the people, and prayed to God always.**

10:3 He saw in a vision evidently about the ninth hour of the day an angel of God coming in to him, and saying unto him, Cornelius.

10:4 And when he looked on him, he was afraid, and said, What is it, Lord? And he said unto him, Thy prayers and thine alms are come up for a memorial before God.

10:5 And now send men to Joppa, and call for one Simon, whose surname is Peter: 10:6 He lodges with one Simon a tanner, whose house is by the sea side: he shall tell thee what thou ought to do.

10:7 And when the angel which spoke unto Cornelius was departed, he called two of his household servants, and a devout soldier of them that waited on him continually;
10:8 And when he had declared all these things unto them, he sent them to Joppa.

10:9 On the morrow, as they went on their journey, and drew nigh unto the city, Peter went up upon the housetop to pray about the sixth hour: 10:10 And he became very hungry, and would have eaten: but while they made ready, he fell into a trance, 10:11 And saw heaven opened, and a certain vessel descending upon him, as it had been a great sheet knit at the four corners, and let down to the earth: 10:12 Wherein were all manner of fourfooted beasts of the earth, and wild beasts, and creeping things, and fowls of the air.

10:13 And there came a voice to him, Rise, Peter; kill, and eat.

10:14 But Peter said, Not so, Lord; for I have never eaten anything that is common or unclean.

10:15 And the voice spoke unto him again the second time, What God has cleansed, that call not thou common.

10:16 This was done thrice: and the vessel was received up again into heaven.

10:17 Now while Peter doubted in himself what this vision which he had seen should mean, behold, the men which were sent from Cornelius had made enquiry for Simon's house, and stood before the gate, 10:18 And called, and asked whether Simon, which was surnamed Peter, were lodged there.

10:19 While Peter thought on the vision, the Spirit said unto him, Behold, three men seek thee.

10:20 Arise therefore, and get thee down, and go with them, doubting nothing: for I have sent them.

10:21 Then Peter went down to the men which were sent unto him from Cornelius; and said, Behold, I am he whom you seek: what is the cause wherefore you are come?

10:22 And they said, Cornelius the centurion, a just man, and one that fears God, and of good report among all the nation of the Jews, was warned from God by a holy angel to send for thee into his house, and to hear words of thee.

10:23 Then called he them in, and lodged them. And on the morrow Peter went away with them, and certain brethren from Joppa accompanied him.

10:24 And the morrow after they entered into Caesarea. And Cornelius waited for them, and he had called together his kinsmen and near friends.

10:25 And as Peter was coming in, Cornelius met him, and fell down at his feet, and worshipped him.

10:26 But Peter took him up, saying, Stand up; I myself also am a man.

10:27 And as he talked with him, he went in, and found many that were come together.

10:28 And he said unto them, You know how that it is an unlawful thing for a man that is a Jew to keep company, or come unto one of another nation; but God has showed me that I should not call any man common or unclean.

10:29 Therefore came I unto you without gainsaying, as soon as I was sent for: I ask therefore for what intent you have sent for me?

10:30 And Cornelius said, Four days ago I was fasting until this hour; and at the ninth hour I prayed in my house, and, behold, a man stood before me in bright clothing,
10:31 And said, Cornelius, thy prayer is heard, and thine alms are had in remembrance in the sight of God.

10:32 Send therefore to Joppa, and call hither Simon, whose surname is Peter; he is lodged in the house of one Simon a tanner by the sea side: who, when he comes, shall speak unto thee.

10:33 Immediately therefore I sent to thee; and thou has well done that thou art come. Now therefore are we all here present before God, to hear all things that are commanded thee of God.

10:34 Then Peter opened his mouth, and said, Of a truth I perceive that God is no respecter of persons: 10:35 **But in every nation he that fears him, and works righteousness, is accepted with him.**

10:36 The word which God sent unto the children of Israel, preaching peace by Jesus Christ: (he is Lord of all:)
10:37 That word, I say, you know, which was published throughout all Judaea, and began from Galilee, after the baptism which John preached; 10:38 **How God anointed Jesus of Nazareth with the Holy Spirit and with power: who went about doing good, and healing all that were oppressed of the devil; for God was with him.**

10:39 And we are witnesses of all things which he did both in the land of the Jews, and in Jerusalem; whom they

slew and hanged on a tree: 10:40 Him God raised up the third day, and showed him openly; 10:41 Not to all the people, but unto witnesses chosen before God, even to us, who did eat and drink with him after he rose from the dead.

10:42 And he commanded us to preach unto the people, and to testify that it is he which was ordained of God to be the Judge of quick and dead.

10:43 To him give all the prophets witness, **that through his name whosoever believes in him shall receive remission of sins.**

10:44 While Peter yet spoke these words, the Holy Spirit fell on all them which heard the word.

10:45 And they of the circumcision which believed were astonished, as many as came with Peter, because that on the Gentiles also was poured out the gift of the Holy Spirit. 10:46 For they heard them speak with tongues, and magnify God.

Then answered Peter, 10:47 Can any man forbid water, that these should not be baptized, which have received the Holy Spirit as well as we? 10:48 And he commanded them to be baptized in the name of the Lord. Then prayed they him to tarry certain days.

11:1 And the apostles and brethren that were in Judaea heard that the Gentiles had also received the word of God.

11:2 And when Peter was come up to Jerusalem, they that were of the circumcision contended with him, 11:3 Saying, Thou went in to men uncircumcised, and didst eat with them.

11:4 But Peter rehearsed the matter from the beginning, and expounded it by order unto them, saying, 11:5 I was in the city of Joppa praying: and in a trance I saw a vision, A certain vessel descend, as it had been a great sheet, let down from heaven by four corners; and it came even to

me: 11:6 Upon the which when I had fastened mine eyes, I considered, and saw fourfooted beasts of the earth, and wild beasts, and creeping things, and fowls of the air.

11:7 And I heard a voice saying unto me, Arise, Peter; slay and eat.

11:8 But I said, Not so, Lord: for nothing common or unclean has at any time entered into my mouth.

11:9 But the voice answered me again from heaven, What God has cleansed, that call not thou common.

11:10 And this was done three times: and all were drawn up again into heaven.

11:11 And, behold, immediately there were three men already come unto the house where I was, sent from Caesarea unto me.

11:12 And the Spirit bade me go with them, nothing doubting. Moreover these six brethren accompanied me, and we entered into the man's house: 11:13 And he showed us how he had seen an angel in his house, which stood and said unto him, Send men to Joppa, and call for Simon, whose surname is Peter; 11:14 Who shall tell thee words, whereby thou and all thy house shall be saved.

11:15 And as I began to speak, the Holy Spirit fell on them, as on us at the beginning.

11:16 Then remembered I the word of the Lord, how that he said, John indeed baptized with water; but you shall be baptized with the Holy Spirit.

11:17 Forasmuch then as God gave them the like gift as he did unto us, who believed on the Lord Jesus Christ; what was I, that I could withstand God? 11:18 When they heard these things, they held their peace, and glorified God, saying, **Then has God also to the Gentiles granted repentance unto life.**

Scripture:

Galatians 3:13 Christ has redeemed us from the curse of the law, being made a curse for us: for it is written, Cursed is every one that hangeth on a tree: 3:14 **That the blessing of Abraham might come on the Gentiles through Jesus Christ;** that we might receive the promise of the Spirit through faith.

Scripture:

John 6:63 **It is the spirit that quickens;** the words that I speak unto you, they are spirit, and they are life.

Scripture:

Acts 28:23 And when they [Jews in Rome] had appointed Paul a day, there came many to him into his lodging; to whom he expounded and testified the kingdom of God, persuading them concerning Jesus, both out of the law of Moses, and out of the prophets, from morning till evening.

28:24 And some believed the things which were spoken, and some believed not.

28:25 And when they agreed not among themselves, they departed, after that Paul had spoken one word, Well spoke the Holy Spirit by Isaiah the prophet unto our fathers, 28:26 Saying, Go unto this people, and say, Hearing you shall hear, and shall not understand; and seeing you shall see, and not perceive: 28:27 For the heart of this people is waxed gross, and their ears are dull of hearing, and their eyes have they closed; lest they should see with their eyes, and hear with their ears, and understand with their heart, and should be converted, and I should heal them.

28:28 Be it known therefore unto you, that **the salvation of God is sent unto the Gentiles**, and that **they will hear it**.

Scripture:

Romans 8:10 **the spirit is life because of righteousness.**

Scripture:

Acts 26:13 At midday, O king, I saw in the way a light from heaven, above the brightness of the sun, shining round about me and them which journeyed with me.

26:14 And when we were all fallen to the earth, I heard a voice speaking unto me, and saying in the Hebrew tongue, Saul, Saul, why persecutes thou me? it is hard for thee to kick against the pricks.

26:15 And I said, Who art thou, Lord? And he said, I am Jesus whom thou persecutes.

26:16 But rise, and stand upon thy feet: for I have appeared unto thee for this purpose, to make thee a minister and a witness both of these things which thou has seen, and of those things in the which I will appear unto thee; 26:17 Delivering thee from the people, and from the Gentiles, unto whom now I send thee, 26:18 To open their eyes, and to turn them from darkness to light, and from the power of Satan unto God, **that they may receive forgiveness of sins, and inheritance among them which are sanctified by faith that is in me.**

Scripture:

2 Peter 1:1 Simon Peter, a servant and an apostle of Jesus Christ, to them that have obtained like precious faith with us through the righteousness of God and our Savior Jesus Christ: 1:2 Grace and peace be multiplied unto you through the knowledge of God, and of Jesus our Lord, 1:3 According as his divine power **has given unto us all things that pertain unto life and godliness**, through the knowledge of him that has called us to glory and virtue: 1:4 whereby are given unto us exceeding great and precious promises: that by these **you might be partakers of the divine nature**, having escaped the corruption that is in the world through lust.

1:5 And beside this, giving all diligence, add to your faith **virtue**; and to virtue knowledge; 1:6 And to knowledge temperance; and to temperance patience; and to patience godliness; 1:7 And to godliness brotherly kindness; and to brotherly kindness charity.

1:8 For if these things be in you, and abound, they make you that you shall neither be barren nor unfruitful in the knowledge of our Lord Jesus Christ.

1:9 But he that lacks these things is blind, and cannot see afar off, **and has forgotten that he was purged from his old sins**.

1:10 Wherefore the rather, brethren, give diligence to make your calling and election sure: for if you do these things, you shall never fall: 1:11 for so **an entrance shall be ministered unto you abundantly into the everlasting kingdom of our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ**.

Observation:

What is the divine nature? Immortality and incorruptibility.

Scripture:

[Jesus is speaking]

John 8:26 he that sent me is true; and I speak to the world those things which I have heard of him.

Scripture:

Matthew 13:10 And **the disciples** came, and said unto Jesus, Why speak thou unto them in parables? 13:11 He answered and said unto them, Because it is given unto you **to know the mysteries of the kingdom of heaven**, but to them it is not given.

13:12 For whosoever has, to him shall be given, and he shall have more abundance:

but whosoever has not, from him shall be taken away even that he has. 13:13 Therefore speak I to them in parables: because they seeing see not; and hearing they hear not, neither do they understand.

13:14 And in them is fulfilled the prophecy of Isaiah, which said, By hearing you shall hear, and shall not understand; and seeing you shall see, and shall not perceive: 13:15 For this people's heart is waxed gross, and their ears are dull of hearing, and their eyes they have closed; lest at any time they should see with their eyes and hear with their ears, and should understand with their heart, and should be converted, and I should heal them.

13:16 But **blessed are your eyes, for they see: and your ears, for they hear.**

13:17 For Truly I say unto you, That many prophets and righteous men have desired to see those things which you see, and have not seen them; and to hear those things which you hear, and have not heard them.

Scripture:

Mark 4:10 And when Jesus was alone, they that were about him with the twelve asked of him the parable.

4:11 And he said unto them, Unto you it is given to know the mystery of the kingdom of God: but unto them that are without, all these things are done in parables: 4:12 That seeing they may see, and not perceive; and hearing they may hear, and not understand; lest at any time they should be converted, and their sins should be forgiven them.

Observations:

Notice how Jesus interchanges forgiving their sins and healing them?

lest at any time they should be converted, and I should heal them.

lest at any time they should be converted, and their sins should be forgiven them.

Healing is the result of forgiving their sins. Without sin, death has nothing to follow. Forgiveness of sins comes first creating the conditions for healing. Without sin, there is no sickness. The righteous are whole and do not need a physician.

Scripture:

Mark 4:33 And with many such parables spoke he the word unto them, as they were able to hear it. 4:34 But without a parable spoke he not unto them: and when they were alone, he expounded all things to his disciples.

Observations:

To disciples Jesus explains all things. Disciples have eyes that see and ears that hear. To disciples are given the knowledge of the mysteries of the kingdom of heaven.

Scripture:

Mark 4:24 And Jesus said to his disciples, Take heed what you hear: with what measure you mete, it shall be measured to you: and unto you that hear shall more be given.

Observations:

Take heed to what you hear. If you want to know truth, only listen to truth. God is true. Jesus speaks truth. The Holy Spirit is the Spirit of Truth. The more you hear, the more you are given. And the contrary is true. If you want to avoid the doctrines of men, avoid them by not listening to them.

Scripture:

[Jesus is speaking]

John 13:34 A new commandment I give unto you, that you love one another; as I have loved you, that you also love one another.

13:35 By this shall all men know that you are my disciples, if you have love one to another.

Scripture:

[Jesus is speaking]

John 15:1 I am the true vine, and my Father is the husbandman.

15:2 Every branch in me that bears not fruit he takes away: and every branch that bears fruit, he purges it, that it may bring forth more fruit.

15:3 Now you are clean through the word which I have spoken unto you.

15:4 Abide in me, and I in you. As the branch cannot bear fruit of itself, except it abide in the vine; no more can you, except you abide in me.

15:5 I am the vine, you are the branches: **He that abides in me, and I in him, the same brings forth much fruit:** for without me you can do nothing.

15:6 If a man abide not in me, he is cast forth as a branch, and is withered; and men gather them, and cast them into the fire, and they are burned.

15:7 **If you abide in me, and my words abide in you,** you shall ask what you will, and it shall be done unto you.

15:8 Herein is my Father glorified, that you bear much fruit; **so shall you be my disciples.**

Scripture:

[Jesus is speaking]

Matthew 11:28 Come unto me, all you that labor and are heavy laden, and **I will give you rest.**

11:29 Take the yoke of me upon you, and learn from me; for I am meek and lowly in heart: and you shall find rest unto your souls.

11:30 For my yoke is easy, and my burden is light.

Scripture:

Acts 2:36 let all the house of Israel know assuredly, **that God has made Jesus**, whom you have crucified, **both Lord and Christ.**

Scripture:

Deuteronomy 32:1 Give ear, O you heavens, and I will speak; and hear, O earth, the words of my mouth.

32:2 My doctrine shall drop as the rain, my speech shall distil as the dew, as the small rain upon the tender herb, and as the showers upon the grass: 32:3 Because **I will publish the name of the LORD**: ascribe you greatness unto our God.

32:4 **He is the Rock, his work is perfect: for all his ways are judgment: a God of truth and without iniquity, just and right is he.**

Scripture:

Isaiah 28:9 **Whom shall he teach knowledge? and whom shall he make to understand doctrine?** them that are weaned from the milk, and drawn from the breasts.

28:10 For precept must be upon precept, precept upon precept; line upon line, line upon line; here a little, and there a little: 28:11 For with stammering lips and another tongue he will speak to this people.

28:12 To whom he said, This is the rest wherewith you may cause the weary to rest; and this is the refreshing

Scripture:

[Paul is speaking]

1 Corinthians 14:21 In the law it is written, With men of other tongues and other lips I will speak unto this people

14:2 He that speaks in an unknown tongue speaks not unto men, but unto God: for no man understands him; howbeit **in the spirit he speaks mysteries.**

14:14 if I pray in an unknown tongue, **my spirit prays**

14:6 if I come unto you speaking with tongues, what shall I profit you, except I shall speak to you either by revelation, or by knowledge, or by prophesying, or by doctrine?

14:13 Wherefore let him that speaks in an unknown tongue pray that he may interpret.

14:18 I thank my God, I speak with tongues more than you all: 14:19 yet in the church I had rather speak five words with my understanding, **that by my voice I might teach others also**, than ten thousand words in an unknown tongue.

Observations:

When we speak in tongues, our spirit is having a conversation with God. God speaks to us the mysteries of the kingdom of God. When we ask for the interpretation, we understand in our mind what we have been taught in our spirit, and now are able to teach others also in the languages of men (English, Spanish, etc.).

Scripture:

Isaiah 30:15 For thus says the Lord GOD, the Holy One of Israel; In returning and rest shall you be saved; in rest and in trust shall be your strength

Scripture:

Psalms 132:13 For the LORD has chosen Zion; he has desired it for his habitation.

132:14 This is my rest forever: here will I dwell; for I have desired it.

Scripture:

1 Chronicles 23:25 For David said, The LORD God of Israel has given rest unto his people, that they may dwell in Jerusalem forever.

*

Scripture:

Acts 17:30 the times of this ignorance God winked at; but now commands all men everywhere to repent: 17:31 **Because he has appointed a day, in the which he will judge the world in righteousness** by that man whom he has ordained; whereof he has given assurance unto all men, in that he has raised him from the dead.

Scripture:

[Jesus is speaking]

Matthew 12:28 But if I cast out devils by the Spirit of God, then the kingdom of God is come unto you.

12:29 Or else how can one enter into a strong man's house, and spoil his goods, except he first bind the strong man? and then he will spoil his house.

12:31 Now is the judgment of this world: now shall the prince of this world be cast out.

Scripture:

Revelation 12:7 And there was war in heaven: Michael and his angels fought against the dragon; and the dragon fought and his angels, 12:8 And prevailed not; neither was their place found any more in heaven.

12:9 And the great dragon was cast out, that old serpent, called the Devil, and Satan, which deceiveth the whole world: **he was cast out** into the earth, and his angels were cast out with him.

12:10 And I heard a loud voice saying in heaven, **Now is come salvation, and strength, and the kingdom of our God, and the power of his Christ:** for the accuser of our brethren is cast down, which accused them before our God day and night.

12:11 And they overcame him by the blood of the Lamb, and by the word of their testimony; and they loved not their lives unto the death.

12:12 Therefore rejoice, you heavens, and you that dwell in them. Woe to the inhabitors of the earth and of the sea! for the devil is come down unto you, having great wrath, because he knows that he has but a short time.

Scripture:

Zephaniah 3:14 Sing, O daughter of Zion; shout, O Israel; be glad and rejoice with all the heart, O daughter of Jerusalem.

3:15 The LORD has taken away thy judgments, he has cast out thine enemy: **the king of Israel, even the LORD, is in the midst of thee: thou shall not see evil any more.**

Scripture:

Isaiah 33:20 Look upon Zion, the city of our solemnities: thine eyes shall see Jerusalem a quiet habitation, a tabernacle that shall not be taken down; not one of the stakes thereof shall ever be removed, neither shall any of the cords thereof be broken. 33:24 **And the inhabitant shall not say, I am sick: the people that dwell therein shall be forgiven their iniquity.**

Scripture:

Leviticus 20:26 And you shall be holy unto me: for I the LORD am holy, and have severed you from other people, that you should be mine.

Leviticus 20:22 You shall therefore keep all my statutes, and all my judgments, and do them: that the land, whither I bring you to dwell therein, **spue you not out.**

Scripture:

Revelation 3:14 And unto the angel of the church of the Laodiceans write; These things said the Amen, the faithful and true witness, the beginning of the creation of God;

3:15 I know thy works, that thou art neither cold nor hot: I would thou wert cold or hot. 3:16 So then because thou art lukewarm, and neither cold nor hot, **I will spue thee out of my mouth.**

3:17 Because thou says, I am rich, and increased with goods, and have need of nothing; and know not that thou art wretched, and miserable, and poor, and blind, and naked: 3:18 I counsel thee to buy of me gold tried in the fire, that thou may be rich; and white raiment, that thou may be clothed, and that the shame of thy nakedness do not appear; and anoint thine eyes with eyesalve, that thou may see.

3:19 As many as I love, I rebuke and chasten: be zealous therefore, and repent.

3:20 Behold, I stand at the door, and knock: if any man hear my voice, and open the door, I will come in to him, and will sup with him, and he with me.

3:21 To him that overcomes will I grant to sit with me in my throne, even as I also overcame, and am set down with my Father in his throne. 3:22 He that has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit said unto the churches.

*

Scripture:

Leviticus 20:23 And you shall not walk in the manners of the nation, which I cast out before you: for they committed all these things, and therefore I abhorred them.

20:24 But I have said unto you, You shall inherit their land, and I will give it unto you to possess it, **a land that flows with milk and honey**: I am the LORD your God, which have separated you from other people.

Scripture:

1 Peter 2:2 **As newborn babes, desire the sincere milk of the word**, that you may grow thereby: 2:3 If so be you have tasted that the Lord is gracious.

2:4 To whom coming, as unto a living stone, disallowed indeed of men, but chosen of God, and precious, 2:5 You also, as lively stones, are built up a spiritual house, a holy priesthood, to offer up spiritual sacrifices, acceptable to God by Jesus Christ.

2:9 you are a chosen generation, a royal priesthood, a holy nation, a peculiar people; that you should show forth the praises of him who has called you out of darkness into his marvelous light; 2:10 Which in time past were not a people, but are now the people of God: which had not obtained mercy, but now have obtained mercy.

Scripture:

Revelation 10:10 And I took the little book out of the angel's hand, and ate it up; **and it was in my mouth sweet as honey**

Scripture:

Hebrews 4:16 Let us therefore come boldly unto the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy, and find grace to help in time of need.

5:1 For every high priest taken from among men is ordained for men in things pertaining to God, that he may offer both gifts and sacrifices for sins: 5:2 Who can have compassion on the ignorant, and on them that are out of the way; for that he himself also is compassed with infirmity.

5:3 And by reason hereof he ought, as for the people, so also for himself, to offer for sins. 5:4 And no man takes this honor unto himself, but he that is called of God, as was Aaron. 5:5 So also Christ glorified not himself to be made a high priest; but he that said unto him, Thou art my Son, today have I begotten thee. 5:6 As he said also in another place, Thou art a priest forever after the order of Melchisedec.

5:7 Who in the days of his flesh, when he had offered up prayers and supplications with strong crying and tears unto him that was able to save him from death, and was heard in that he feared; 5:8 Though he were a Son, yet learned he obedience by the things which he suffered; 5:9 And being made perfect, he became the author of eternal salvation unto all them that obey him; 5:10 Called of God a high priest after the order of Melchisedec.

5:11 Of whom we have many things to say, and hard to be uttered, seeing you are dull of hearing. 5:12 For when for the time you ought to be teachers, you have need that one teach you again which be the first principles of the oracles of God; **and are become such as have need of milk, and not of strong meat.**

5:13 For every one that uses milk is unskillful in the word of righteousness: for he is a babe.

5:14 **But strong meat belongs to them that are of full age**, even those who by reason of use have their senses exercised to discern both good and evil.

Scripture:

2 Corinthians 2:14 Now thanks be unto God, which always causes us to triumph in Christ, and makes manifest the savor of his knowledge by us in every place.

2:15 For we are unto God a sweet savor of Christ, in them that are saved, we are the savor of life unto life. And who is sufficient for these things? 2:17 For **we are not as many, which corrupt the word of God**: but as of sincerity, but as of God, in the sight of God speak we in Christ.

Scripture:

1 Corinthians 15:34 **Awake to righteousness, and sin not**; for some have not the knowledge of God: I speak this to your shame.

Scripture:

Proverbs 30:5 **Every word of God is pure**: he is a shield unto them that put their trust in him. 30:6 **Add thou not unto his words**, lest he reprove thee, and thou be found a liar.

Scripture:

Matthew 15:7 **You hypocrites**, well did Isaiah prophesy of you, saying, 15:8 This people draws nigh unto me with their mouth, and honors me with their lips; but their heart is far from me. 15:9 But in vain they do worship me, **teaching for doctrines the commandments of men.**

Scripture:

Isaiah 33:14 **The sinners in Zion are afraid**; fearfulness has surprised **the hypocrites**. Who among us shall dwell with the devouring fire? who among us shall dwell with everlasting burnings?

33:15 He that walks righteously, and speaks uprightly; he that despises the gain of oppressions, that shakes his hands from holding of bribes, that stops his ears from hearing of blood, and shuts his eyes from seeing evil; 33:16 He shall dwell on high: his place of defense shall be the munitions of rocks: bread shall be given him; his waters shall be sure. 33:17 Thine eyes shall see the king in his beauty: they shall behold the land that is very far off.

33:20 Look upon Zion, the city of our solemnities: thine eyes shall see Jerusalem a quiet habitation, a tabernacle that shall not be taken down; not one of the stakes thereof shall ever be removed, neither shall any of the cords thereof be broken.

33:24 And the inhabitant shall not say, I am sick: the people that dwell therein shall be forgiven their iniquity.

Scripture:

Deuteronomy 4:24 the LORD thy God is a consuming fire, even a jealous God.

Scripture:

Luke 13:31 The same day there came certain of the Pharisees, saying unto Jesus, Get thee out, and depart hence: for Herod will kill thee.

13:32 And Jesus said unto them, Go you, and tell that fox, Behold, I cast out devils, and I do cures today and tomorrow, and **the third day I shall be perfected.**

Scripture:

3:8 beloved, be not ignorant of this one thing, that **one day is with the Lord as a thousand years**, and a thousand years as one day.

3:9 The Lord is not slack concerning his promise, as some men count slackness; but is longsuffering to us-ward, not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance.

Scripture:

Hosea 6:1 Come, and let us return unto the LORD: for he has torn, and he will heal us; he has smitten, and he will bind us up.

6:2 After two days will he revive us: in the third day he will raise us up, and we shall live in his sight.

6:3 Then shall we know, if we follow on to know the LORD: his going forth is prepared as the morning; **and he shall come unto us as the rain, as the latter and former rain unto the earth.**

Scripture:

1 Chronicles 29:10 David blessed the LORD before all the congregation: and David said, Blessed be thou, LORD God of Israel our father, forever and ever.

29:11 Thine, O LORD is the greatness, and the power, and the glory, and the victory, and the majesty: for all that is in the heaven and in the earth is thine; **thine is the kingdom, O LORD, and thou art exalted as head above all.**

29:12 Both riches and honor come of thee, and thou reigns over all; and in thine hand is power and might; and in thine hand it is to make great, and to give strength unto all.

29:13 Now therefore, our God, we thank thee, and praise thy glorious name.

A note from the author:

Thank you for reading this book and considering these scriptures. I appreciate you sharing your time with me.

*

Being a disciple of Jesus Christ

Dee Henderson

© copyright 2021 by Dee Henderson. All rights reserved.

Permission is granted to copy any pages of this book for personal use and/or bible study or classroom handout, but not for resale.

Permission is granted for portions of this text to be inserted into another publication so long as they are quoted as written and the author, title and pages are indicated as their source.

All other rights are reserved. No part of this publication may be reproduced, stored in retrieval system, or transmitted in any form or by any means – for example, electronic, photocopy, recording – without the express written permission of the publisher.

Contact the author/publisher:

Dee Henderson

dee@deehenderson.com

www.deehenderson.com

current printing revision: August 25th, 2021

KJV: Scripture quotations marked KJV are taken from the King James Version of the bible.

INT: Scripture quotations marked INT are taken from the Interlinear Hebrew-Greek-English Bible, Jay P. Green, Sr. General Editor and Translator, copyright © 1976, 1977, 1980, 1981, 1984, 1985 by Jay Green Sr.

Scriptures not marked by source are from the King James Version (KJV) as worded or punctuated by the author.

CHAPTER ONE

Jesus tells us to go and make disciples. In simple terms it means we listen to Jesus and learn from him, then go and tell others what we have heard. A disciple is one who accepts and assists in spreading the doctrine of another. I don't want to create and tell you my own doctrine. I want to show you the doctrine of Jesus Christ, what he taught. And because lies are toxic, I also want to rebuke a few doctrines of men, those teachings which are contrary to what Jesus has said.

Let me start with a simple observation:

In the book of Revelation, Jesus writes to 7 churches. Jesus corrects 5 out of the 7 churches for believing, teaching, or doing something wrong. Jesus tells them to repent. For example, to the church in Pergamos, Jesus writes in part:

Revelation 2:14 I have a few things against you, because you have those that hold the doctrine of Balaam ... 2:15 you also have those that hold the doctrine of the Nicolaitanes, which I hate. 2:16 Repent, or else I will come to you quickly and will fight against them with the sword of my mouth.

Jesus also warned his disciples: Matthew 16:6 Then Jesus said to them, Take heed and beware of the leaven of the Pharisees and of the Sadducees. ... 16:12 Then they understood how that he bade them to beware of the doctrine of the Pharisees and of the Sadducees.

Please learn from this history. Men have not changed, nor has Jesus. Men create doctrines which are false and Jesus fights against them with the sword of his mouth – his words.

I start here for this reason. If you rely on your church to have taught you perfectly, to have taught you only what is true, the odds they have done so are low. Only 2 in 7 churches didn't need correction. Please do not be simple. A simple person believes what they are told and suffers for it. Be wise. Examine the scriptures and see if what you have been taught is true. You can read and understand the scriptures because you have the Holy Spirit, the Spirit of Truth, with you to guide you. Ask Jesus your questions. God himself will teach you.

If you have been told a lie and you believe a lie, it costs you something. False teaching isn't harmless. Satan lies to you in order to steal something which belongs to you. Jesus will give you truth to replace lies. Jesus speaks the truth, always.

What is a disciple?

John 8:31 Then Jesus said to those Jews which believed on him, If you continue in my word, then are you my disciples indeed; 8:32 and you shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free.

Luke 8:9 his disciples asked him, saying, What might this parable be? 8:10 And Jesus said, To you it is given to know the mysteries of the kingdom of God:

You want to be a disciple given what Jesus said. There are huge rewards. But there is no getting around the fact that being a disciple takes time.

God knows how much time I spend with him. I decided to keep a time log so I would know too. I've spent on average three and a half hours with God every day for the last four months. There are peaks and valleys, some days many hours, other days barely any minutes, but the time log is a record of our life together – it says we have one. God and I are together.

I suggest you keep a time log and see what it shows. Do you have a life with God? Or do you have a God who is somewhere else above you doing things which you aren't sure what are?

I spend my time reading scripture, asking God questions, and writing down observations. I have the King James Version of the bible on my laptop in two microsoft word documents so I can easily search and highlight and underline as I read. God says often, look up that word in the dictionary. I have Strong's dictionary so I can look up what Greek and Hebrew words mean. I have Webster's dictionary so I can look up what English words mean. I have the interlinear Hebrew – Greek – English bible so I can see the original scriptures the King James Version was translated from. (I use the 4 volume interlinear bible edited by Jay P. Green, Sr. which has the Strong's number above each word to make the dictionary searches easier). I daily

ask God the question: Father, what is on your heart that you most wish I knew today? Then I spend time with God so he can answer my question.

What God has been teaching me is important. I'll share some things with you which will be helpful, but reading this book won't take the place of talking with God yourself. What it will likely do is give you some topics of conversation.

We've misunderstood Christianity.

I know how jarring that sounds. I am a Christian writing to Christians, finding myself at the very beginning needing to correct a foundational pillar we have commonly believed in. I believe we have heard a lie, a doctrine of men, which has been toxic to us. As a result, we have not heard clearly the good news. We haven't heard the doctrine of Jesus Christ, what he actually said. Would you be willing to read 600 more words so I can show you?

Those who believe in Jesus and have been baptized – we have been taught something like this –

Jesus has gone into heaven to prepare a place for you in his Father's house. Because your sins are forgiven by the blood of Jesus, when you die you will go to heaven and be with Jesus, and then you will live forever. In heaven you will be righteous and without sin, you will be whole and healthy, you will be perfect forever.

Jesus is coming back and will make everything right on earth. Christians all around the world are waiting with anticipation for the day Jesus returns.

What God wants you to do now while you wait is to tell people about Jesus, to preach repentance and baptism for the forgiveness of sins. God wants you to do what is right, to love God and to love your neighbors, to daily read scripture, to give to the church and to the poor. God wants you to fast and to pray, so you ask often, Father, your kingdom come, your will be done, on earth as it is in heaven.

In the future in heaven you won't struggle with sickness and weakness and sin. In the future you will be immortal and righteous and with Jesus. All will be good.

This is what the church believes and teaches, with some variations for how it happens and when. Does that description resonate with what you have heard and believe? I wrote it from memory because that is what I was taught.

My teachers were more eloquent than I am and deeply desired to teach me about Jesus. I was baptized in the church which taught me this and it remains my home church.

But there is a problem. That is not the good news. It is a lie, a doctrine of men.

Taking a very deep breath and writing from a humble heart, let me show you the truth.

The doctrine of Jesus Christ

To those who believe in Jesus and have been baptized – this is the good news –

You died in baptism, you were translated into heaven, and are now immortal and incorruptible. You are righteous, have a good heart, and cannot sin. You are holy and blessed forever. Jesus has sent you from heaven back to earth because Jesus has given you your inheritance.

Your birthright as a child of God is eternal life. Your blessing is to inherit the earth. You have both your birthright and your blessing. You will never physically die. You have inherited the earth and will remain forever upon it. You are no longer a man, you are now a child of God. The Father and the Son are with you. You have received the kingdom of God on earth.

The thoughts of the righteous are right. The desires of the righteous are only good. What God your Father wants you to do now is to be yourself. You are a good tree which brings forth good fruit. You cannot bring forth evil because you have a good heart. You abide in the word of God because you love it. You speak the truth and show forth righteousness because you hate lies. You love your enemies because you are perfect like your Father. You want people to be free of sin. You want them to know the truth. You want them to live immortal and righteous lives enjoying being with Jesus forever on the earth. You want them to

have what you have.

This is the doctrine of Jesus Christ.

Quite a difference, isn't it?

In the doctrine of men, Christians are waiting for good to happen at a future date.

In the doctrine of Jesus Christ, Christians are righteous and immortal and have inherited the earth, and it all happened at baptism. It is finished.

This book is written to show you the doctrine of Jesus Christ and to rebuke the doctrine of men. We will spend most of the book looking at the scriptures together. I'm going to complete this overview first, then begin to unpack everything I just said line by line in the scriptures.

And then shall come the End

Satan has deceived the church and stolen our birthright and our blessing. The lie continues to flow from one generation to generation because the church does not see the lie and has not replaced it with the truth. This did not surprise our Lord Jesus Christ. Jesus told us how long it would take for the church to see the truth.

Matthew 24:14 And this gospel of the kingdom shall be preached in all the world for a witness unto all nations, and then the end shall come.

It is projected that by 2030 the scriptures will have been translated into every language on earth. Everyone who desires to read the word of God, or listen to it on audio, will be able to do so in their own language. The gospel has arrived in every nation, the bible then follows in their own language, the people find Jesus and rejoice. This progression is now happening everywhere.

Jesus is the end. The gospel shall be preached in all the world for a witness to all nations and then Jesus shall come.

Revelation 21:6 And he said unto me, It is done. I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end. I will give unto him that is thirsty of the fountain of the water of life freely.

I testify Jesus has come. I have Jesus. I have the end.

2 John 1:9 Whosoever transgresses, and abides not in the doctrine of Christ, has not God. He that abides in the doctrine of Christ, he has both the Father and the Son.

Jesus comes to each one of us individually when we are baptized and take our first communion. I have the Father and of the Son and the Holy Spirit. So do you if you abide in the doctrine of Christ. When you spend time with Jesus in the word of God you learn Jesus is with us. He is always with us, to the end of the world.

Matthew 28:19 Go you therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Spirit: 28:20 teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you: and, lo, I am with you always, even unto the end of the world. Amen.

Jesus abides in us. We are the body of Jesus Christ. We are members of his body. He is in us and we are in him.

1 John 5:20 And we know that the Son of God is come, and has given us an understanding, that we may know him that is true, and we are in him that is true, even in his Son Jesus Christ. This is the true God, and eternal life.

A simple observation: It is impossible to die if Jesus never leaves us.

James 2:26 tells us the body without the spirit is dead. We cannot die unless the spirit leaves our body. Jesus will never leave us. Therefore we cannot die.

John 14:18 I will not leave you comfortless: I will come to you. 14:19 Yet a little while, and the world sees me no more; but you see me: because I live, you shall live also.

God has life in himself. Eternal life is having God with you always. God is dwelling in us, giving us life by his presence with us.

1 John 5:11 And this is the record, that God has given to us eternal life, and this life is in his Son. 5:12 He that has the Son has life; and he that has not the Son of God has not life.

John 5:21 For as the Father raises up the dead, and quickens them; even so the Son quickens whom he will. 5:26 For as the Father has life in himself; so has he given to the Son to have life in himself;

John 10:27 My sheep hear my voice, and I know them, and they follow me: 10:28 And I give unto them eternal life; and they shall never die, neither shall any man pluck them out of my hand.

John 6:47 Truly, Truly, I say unto you, He that believes on me has everlasting life.

Jesus says has, not will have in the future.

Satan is a thief.

The lie satan has told Christians is that there is eternal life coming ... later. Satan says, after you die and go to heaven you will have eternal life. Satan lies to us. God says we have everlasting life now.

We have believed the lie rather than God. So satan kills us. Satan is a thief. The thief comes to steal, kill, and destroy. Satan wants to kill Christians. Revelation 12:17 says satan makes war with those which keep the commandments of God and have the testimony of Jesus Christ.

God says satan is subtle. He truly is. Did you see just how subtle his lie is? Satan says, after you die and go to heaven you will have eternal life. It is actually a fully true statement. Only satan doesn't mention the timing of when things happened. Satan implies your death is in your future. Satan doesn't tell you the full truth, that you died in baptism and your death has already occurred. Satan doesn't mention you were translated into heaven in baptism.

Hebrews 9:27 it is appointed unto men once to die

Romans 6:3 Know you not, that so many of us as were baptized into Jesus Christ were baptized into his death?

Romans 6:4 we are buried with Christ by baptism into death

2 Corinthians. 4:18 the things which are seen are temporal; but the things which are not seen are eternal.

God appointed you to die only once. You die in baptism and your death is forever behind you. It has happened. You will never die again. That's the good news. You die in baptism and you never die again.

Satan says you have to see your death for you to have died. God says the death you don't see is your eternal true death.

The lie satan has told Christians is that there is eternal life coming ... later. Satan says, after you die a seen death you will go to heaven and have eternal life.

Because we believe the lie, satan kills us. We have our seen death. Satan destroys our body. Satan is a thief who steals, kills, and destroys. He steals our inheritance, he kills us, and he destroys our body. We are a spirit and a soul living in a body. If we die, what happens? A seen death is temporary. We are saved by Jesus, our sins are forgiven, so we do not go to hell after we die, we go to heaven. We do have eternal life in heaven with Jesus, our spirit lives, our

soul lives, but satan just destroyed our body and took our inheritance away from us. We were alive on earth having inherited everything. We are no longer on earth. In heaven we hear the truth and we see what satan did to us because we believed his lie.

Why did Adam die? He sinned. Repent and be baptized for the forgiveness of sins. If your sins are washed away in baptism, why would you die? You don't. One death is all that God planned for us, and he sent Jesus to be the one who would die the seen death in our place. When we are baptized we are buried with Jesus into death, and then raised up out of the water alive forevermore. We have our one death and resurrection in baptism.

Romans 6:7 For he that is dead is freed from sin.

We are freed from sin in baptism. We are permanently free from sin. We are righteous. We are freed by God from both sin and death in baptism. We are righteous and alive forevermore.

Jesus takes away our sins, Jesus gives us eternal life, and Jesus gives us our inheritance of the earth.

Matthew 5:5 Blessed are the meek: for they shall inherit the earth.

Proverbs 37:29 The righteous shall inherit the land, and dwell therein forever.

Proverbs 10:30 The righteous shall never be removed: but the wicked shall not inhabit the earth.

Where are we now? On the earth. We have received our inheritance. The question is not when will we receive our inheritance, the question is, will we keep it? If you listen to Jesus you will know the truth and keep your inheritance. If you listen to satan lie to you, he's going to steal your inheritance, and you will be the one who let him do so.

David fought Goliath. The challenge made was straightforward – whoever wins the battle, the losing army would serve the winner’s army. Two would fight in place of two armies battling. Jesus fought Satan. And Jesus won. He won on behalf of the people of God. Because Jesus won the battle, God exalted him. God has subjected all in heaven and on earth, all seen and unseen, to Jesus. The kingdom of Jesus rules over the kingdom of satan. After Jesus rose from the dead, he came and spoke to his disciples and said, all power is given to me in heaven and in earth. (Matthew 28:18)

Jesus victory over death, over satan, over darkness – it’s finished. The very next thing Jesus says to the disciples is, Matthew 28:19, go you therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and the Son and the Holy Spirit. Do you see it? Go to all the nations, tell them I won, and baptize them – give them freedom. When you die in baptism, you are freed from sin. When you die in baptism, you are freed from death. Your one death is behind you in that baptism. You are now blessed. You are righteous and inherit the earth; you shall never be removed from the earth. Love your neighbor as yourself. Give them the same freedom I gave to you. Set them free.

The situation today is like the end of the civil war in the united states. The union army defeats the confederate army and the government sets free all slaves. Two years later, the union army arrives in Texas to tell the slaves they are free. The war had ended two years prior, the slaves were free, but the slave owners in Texas didn’t tell them that truth because they wanted them to remain slaves. The slaves didn’t know how to read. They couldn’t read the proclamation which set them free. Satan treats us the same way, don’t read the word for yourself, I’ll tell you what is says. When you listen to a liar, you hear lies.

The union army came to Texas to enforce the victory and set the slaves free. That is what we do for the nations. The winning army goes to all the nations and sets the people free. Jesus has given all nations, Jews and Gentiles, freedom from sin and death. Go to all the nations, tell them I won, and baptize them – give them freedom. Set them free of sin and death and free of satan's lie.

We enable satan to hold the nations hostage to his lie because we do not know the truth and remain on the earth, living and never dying, celebrating our 200th birthday, our 500th birthday. Satan says to the nations, these people preaching Jesus, they can't set you free of sin. The penalty for sin is death. See, they are dying, just like you are dying. We are conformed to the world because we don't know the truth, and both we, and those around us in the nations suffer for our believing a lie. Jesus is the end. Jesus in us is the end. When we live and do not die, people will see Jesus in us, they will believe and be baptized, be set free of sin, and they too will live. There will be no more death on earth.

1 Corinthians 15:26 The last enemy that shall be destroyed is death.

Jesus rose from the dead on the third day. Jesus is alive. We join with Jesus and defeat death at our baptism. We come out of baptism alive forevermore. Jesus has given us peace. Satan has been crushed under Jesus' feet.

After the resurrection, when Jesus appears to his disciples, the first thing Jesus says is, Peace to you. He says it twice in a matter of verses. He's telling them the good news that the war is won, all the enemies are defeated. You can put down your swords, the fight is over. There is peace. I give you rest. Enter Zion. Celebrate. We go and tell the nations the good news, we set the nations free of sin and death, and we enter Zion and we celebrate. We rest. We rest individually, free of sin, and alive forever. We rest corporately, as nations gathered together to Jesus.

Isaiah 14:7 The whole earth is at rest, and is quiet: they break forth into singing.

Don't let satan steal your inheritance. You have everlasting life. Jesus is your everlasting life. If you spend time with Jesus every day you will know the truth and the truth will set you free. You will remain living forever on the earth. You will be free of sin, free of death, and free of satan's lies. And because you are free, you will be able to give freedom to others. It is good to be a disciple.

The world has been judged

Jesus, on the way to the cross, says in John 12:31, now is the judgment of this world: now shall the prince of this world be cast out. 12:32 And I, if I be lifted up from the earth, will draw all men unto me.

Judgment of the world happened at the cross.

God is not bound by time. It is why God can write in the Psalms that the soldiers who crucify Jesus will cast lots to decide who gets his robe. God didn't cause the soldiers to do that, he just knew they would, and so he wrote down the detail for us about a 1,000 years before we would see it happen.

God knows every person who will be born in every place in all time and he knows the details of our lives. God is good to all. Even the most wicked man receives a call to come to Jesus and be saved. God knows the decision we will make, to believe in Jesus and be righteous, or to deny Jesus and remain wicked. Thus God can judge the world at the cross and do so with righteous and perfect justice.

The wicked are cut off from the land of the living. God has already spoken this judgment. Mankind is going extinct. Judgment has already happened. We are simply watching it unfold. The wicked are perishing from the earth at a rapid rate. The old earth is just that – old. Man dies when they reach 70 – 120 years old. Birthrates are below 2.1 in almost every nation in the earth. When the birth rate is below 2.1 the population is shrinking. There are not enough children being born to sustain even a level population number. China at 1 billion people will soon have only 300 million. That is happening in nation after nation. People will die all around the earth in ever increasing numbers of death each year, if they do not hear the good news, become righteous, and receive life from God. The righteous will live. The wicked shall not inhabit the earth. They return to dust.

The earth looks like it is filled with people at 7 billion and is ever increasing, but the majority of nations are actually contracting in population. You don't see the fall yet, but wait 120 years. Every man alive today will be dead. The number of children they have had is a dramatically smaller population. The generation after that, the children of their children, is even smaller. To see what God is doing, think as God does, and consider the generations. The wicked are cut off from the land of the living. The memory of them, their name, is being erased from the earth. They have no more children.

The children of God, however, are being born at a rapid rate. While the wicked die and disappear, the righteous thrive and multiply. God is in the generation of the righteous. Every baptism brings another child of God into the world. God has a lot of children. Jesus brings many brethren to glory.

The world has been judged. The old world has passed away. We are seeing it vanish. All things are become new. We become new in baptism. We are watching the righteous heaven and righteous earth appear.

2 Corinthians 5:17-18 If any man be in Christ, he is a new creature: old things are passed away; behold, all things are become new. And all things are of God, who has reconciled us to himself by Jesus Christ.

The earth was made to be inhabited. Those who remain on the earth are the righteous. The new heaven and new earth are a very personal event for the Father. His children are being born. God knows all his kids names. God knows your name. He knows where you live in your Father's house. When the last man has been born and has made his decision regarding Jesus, there will be no more men to save in baptism. The children of God will have all been born.

The Good News

The good news is elegant. By grace, God makes righteous the ungodly. God gives us his own unchanging nature so we won't fall again. God gives us the earth as our inheritance. And God comes to live with us. It all happens at baptism and our first communion.

God asks us to love him and love others, because when we love him we will spend time with him and he can show us the truth, and when we love others, we manifest to everyone we are his children.

You are born an infant. You are perfect but you are young. Kids can and will mess up because they are still children. You can still do what is wrong because you didn't know it was wrong. The one who is blind has no sin. That is why the Father instructs and corrects us; the Father teaches us what is right. We listen and obey our Father and grow up. We grow to maturity by being a disciple. Time with God is the variable, not how many years we have been a Christian. We learn the truth line upon line, precept upon precept, every conversation with God building on the one before. When we are mature, we look like Jesus. Jesus lives without sin forever. We do too.

Immortality

Why has the church collectively, and us individually, not seen this good news before now?

I don't know. I have some thoughts as to why, but not one answer. I know Jesus said this is when we would see it, when the gospel had been preached to all nations. I know something obvious can remain hidden until God decides it is the right time for us to see and understand it. Consider this passage:

Mark 9:31 Jesus taught his disciples, and said unto them, The Son of man is delivered into the hands of men, and they shall kill him; and after that he is killed, he shall rise the third day. 9:32 But they understood not that saying, and were afraid to ask him.

If the disciples couldn't see in advance the resurrection when Jesus told them it would occur, are you surprised the church didn't see everlasting life until it arrived? The gospel has been preached to all the nations so now Jesus comes. Now we see Jesus giving us everlasting life. That's one possible answer. God held our eyes from seeing Jesus giving us life until it was the right time.

There's another possible answer. It has to do with what is easy and what is hard. Believing the lie – we will die and go to heaven and then good things will happen – is easier. Everyone believes the lie. Your neighbor believes the lie. Your family believes the lie. Your pastor believes the lie. Your church believes and teaches the lie. You have to buck everyone to believe the truth. It is easier to believe the lie. And maybe, just maybe, you sort of prefer the lie over the truth.

Consider immortality. The actual reality of immortality. The price of immortality is to cease from sin. You can only be immortal if you are righteous.

God is righteous and immortal. When Adam stopped being righteous, he stopped being immortal.

You have to be righteous forever. You can't tell a lie, murmur, complain, or think an evil thought about another. You have to love everyone and share your stuff and be kind, all the time. You have to be righteous and live perfect, every hour of today, and all of tomorrow, and all of the day after that – forever. You can't take a break from it, from being righteousness. You have to always do what is right.

Most people don't want to be that good. They want to be good most of the time, but occasionally, I just need a break from being good, from loving everyone all the time. I am tired of being the only one who does what is right. I want to be in a bad mood and be annoyed and tell a lie about what I'm doing tonight and go party with old friends who are having such a good time. I am tired of loving everyone, all the time. I am tired of being good, all the time.

The price of immortality is that you have to be righteous all the time.

Immortality doesn't sound like much fun.

With what I've just written, I am showing you your heart.

Deep down, the desire of your heart may be that you prefer to believe the lie. You don't want to be righteous today. You want to be righteous ... later. You want to be immortal and righteous and with Jesus ... tomorrow. Not today. Not yet. Part of us loves the lie, the carefree thought that we can love Jesus and continue to struggle with sin, have some fun, but repent and come back. There is a day in the future when we are in heaven when we will be fully righteous and then we will be perfect. But it isn't today. We can live our lives doing our best and all will be okay with God because Jesus has saved us. It sounds wonderful. But that is the lie. Satan knows how to make a lie sound good. Satan makes the lie

sound better and more desirable than the truth. And satan uses that lie to kill us.

What does God desire? Godly offspring. Righteous kids. Right now righteous kids, not someday in the future. Jesus died to make that happen.

Do you want to be righteous? Actually righteous and immortal? Or in your heart do you really want to still be an occasional sinner? In your heart do you really want to be immortal only if you can still occasionally sin? Ponder that a moment. In your heart do you really want to be immortal only if you can still occasionally sin? Or are you ready to let sin go completely?

What is in your heart? God sees your heart very clearly. No one can hide their heart from God.

You actually have to want to be immortal. You have to want to be righteous. We are good at seeking first the kingdom of God. We forget God told us to seek first his kingdom and his righteousness. We can't have his kingdom if we don't also have his righteousness.

All of scripture points to this conclusion: Sinners die. The righteous live.

Jesus says the one you should fear is not man, but God. God is the one who can send you to hell. Hell will destroy your soul and your body – all that makes you, you. You as a person will be destroyed in unquenchable fire.

The only way to avoid the lake of fire is to be in the Lamb's book of life.

Those who are written in the Lamb's book of life are the righteous.

What price would you pay to know the truth?

There is a way to separate what is truth from what is an error. Jesus says he has come to witness to the truth. Jesus will tell you what is right.

John 18:37 Pilate therefore said to him, Art thou a king then? Jesus answered, Thou says that I am a king. To this end I was born, and for this cause I came into the world, that I should bear witness unto the truth. Every one that is of the truth hears my voice.

How are you going to proceed from here regarding the topics of righteousness and immortality?

Are you going to read the scriptures and have hours of conversation with God?

Are you going to gather more information about the topics from books and sermons and trust that the truth will filter to the top, and the errors will fall away, through the number of different voices you listen to?

Are you going to do both? Are you going to do neither?

What is stirring inside you and what are you considering to be your next steps, if any?

Jesus cautions, be careful what you hear.

Mark 4:24 And he said unto them, Take heed what you hear: with what measure you mete, it shall be measured to you: and unto you that hear shall more be given. 4:25 For he that has, to him shall be given: and he that has not, from him shall be taken even that which he has.

Take heed what you hear. It means if you want to know the truth, only listen to the truth. Be careful what you hear, because you will be given more of the same kind. If you hear the truth, you will be given more truth. If you hear lies, you will be given more lies. If you hear both, you will

get more of both in a jumble together.

Hearing amplifies. Hearing gives you more of the same thing. For example: You are hearing truth. So to make room for more truth, what you are not listening to gets taken away. You are not listening to lies, so lies get taken away. If you continue listening to only truth for a long enough time, there will be no lies left in you. When you are filled with the truth, you are filled with God, you are filled with light.

Satan is a liar. God is true. Satan is dark. God is light.

When you stop hearing truth and begin to hear lies, you begin to tip back the other direction. To make room for more lies, truth gets taken away. You become darker inside. What you need is to go in only one direction, toward God, by only listening to the truth.

When you are, figuratively, learning to tie your shoelaces, many Christians know the truth and can accurately teach you. We can all share the good news of repentance and baptism for the forgiveness of sins. We can all speak of Jesus being resurrected from the dead. That is the milk of scripture.

You don't get the same choice when it comes to the meat of the scriptures. Jesus becomes your only teacher. You must pay the price of being a disciple. You must spend sustained time listening only to Jesus.

Jesus warns us to beware of false prophets who come to us in sheep's clothing. He says we will know them by their fruit. They will look like good Christian teachers well versed in scripture. But if what they are teaching is producing unrighteousness, people are not ceasing to sin, if what they are teaching is producing death, people are dying, what they are teaching is a lie, not what is the truth. Jesus came to give you righteousness and life. Good teachers will produce good fruit.

Matthew 13:10 And the disciples came, and said to Jesus, Why do you speak to them in parables? 13:11 He answered and said to them, Because it is given to you to know the mysteries of the kingdom of heaven, but to them it is not given. 13:12 For whosoever has, to him shall be given, and he shall have more abundance: but whosoever has not, from him shall be taken away even that he has. 13:13 Therefore I speak to them in parables: because they seeing see not; and hearing they hear not, neither do they understand.

13:14 And in them is fulfilled the prophecy of Isaiah, which said, By hearing you shall hear, and shall not understand; and seeing you shall see, and shall not perceive: 13:15 For this people's heart is waxed gross, and their ears are dull of hearing, and their eyes they have closed; lest at any time they should see with their eyes and hear with their ears, and should understand with their heart, and should be converted, and I should heal them.

13:16 But blessed are your eyes, for they see: and your ears, for they hear.

Whose eyes can see and whose ears can hear? A disciple's.

In the dark ages before the printing press when only a few people had access to the copies of the scriptures and only a few people could read, there is at least a reason why people might not know the truth. The only reason someone today does not know the truth is a choice – they want something else instead.

Reading the word of God takes time. Asking Jesus questions about what he said takes time. Listening to his answers takes time. Are you willing to spend your time so you will be immortal and have unlimited time? What is the value of having life that never ends, of always having another day?

Matthew 7:13 Enter you in at the strait gate: for wide is the gate, and broad is the way, that leads to destruction, and many there be which go in there at: 7:14 Because strait is the gate, and narrow is the way, which leads unto life, and few there be that find it.

Immortality is freely given to those who want it. The cost is some time at the front end of your unlimited time. I wonder how many people will want it? I want it. God knows what you have decided, he knows what every one of us has decided. Jesus wants us to find life. Jesus tells us where to go to get it. Whoever seeks, finds. But Jesus says only a few find life. That means only a few ever seek it.

The unfolding plan of God

Repent, for the kingdom of heaven is at hand. It's here. It's time to awake to righteous and cease to sin.

The word of God judges the world, those who refuse to believe in Jesus die and return to dust.

The word of God judges the church. Jesus wars with those who teach false doctrines, who do not repent, who do not cease to sin. Jesus spews them out of his body, out of his kingdom.

Those in his kingdom who obey Jesus live forever; are righteous, and remain on the earth.

The earth brings forth righteousness and praise.

Man goes extinct. The wicked are no more.

The old earth brought forth men who were liars, full of sin, who die and return to the dust. The new earth brings forth the sons of God who are righteous, full of the praise of God, who live forever.

Praise our God, all you his servants, and you that fear him, both small and great.

The end has come. Jesus has come.

CHAPTER TWO

Scriptures

Let's unpack the doctrine of Jesus Christ by looking at the scriptures. (To read these scriptures without the discussion, and for ease of future reference and study, chapter three is a **doctrine of Jesus Christ scripture summary**.)

Let's begin with some scriptures that talk about how to read the scriptures and which present the foundation of what God is doing.

Reading the scriptures

Numbers 23:19 God is not a man, that he should lie; neither the son of man, that he should repent: has he said, and shall he not do it? or has he spoken, and shall he not make it good?

The scriptures are filled with definitions which are keys to understanding all the scriptures.

Man is a liar.

A son of man is a man who sins and repents.

God is perfect. God never lies and God never sins. God is not a man. God is not a son of man.

We use a dictionary when we want to understand what something means. When you read a verse which has a definition in it, note that scripture and collect the definitions. They will help you understand other scriptures.

Matthew 9:10 And it came to pass, as Jesus sat at meat in the house, behold, many publicans and sinners came and sat down with him and his disciples. 9:11 And when the Pharisees saw it, they said unto his disciples, Why eats your Master with publicans and sinners?

9:12 But when Jesus heard that, he said unto them, They

that be whole need not a physician, but they that are sick.
9:13 But go you and learn what that means, I will have mercy, and not sacrifice: for I am not come to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance.

Here are some more useful definitions and information.

Jesus has come to call sinners to repentance.

The righteous have no need to repent. The righteous have no sin.

The righteous are whole and have no need of a physician, they are not sick.

James 5:19 Brethren, if any of you do err from the truth, and one convert him; 5:20 Let him know, that he which converts the sinner from the error of his way shall save a soul from death, and shall hide a multitude of sins.

Jesus does this for us. Jesus saves souls from death. Men are living souls.

Proverbs 30:5 Every word of God is pure: he is a shield unto them that put their trust in him. 30:6 **Add thou not to his words**, lest he reprove thee, and thou be found a liar.

Remember these verses. They will guard you from making errors when reading the scriptures. Consider how they apply to this verse.

John 6:47 [Jesus speaking] Truly, Truly, I say unto you, He that believes on me has everlasting life.

Jesus says has, not will have in the future. If you add a word to what Jesus said you end up with a lie.

It is satan who says to a believer you will have eternal life ... later. Jesus says to a believer you have eternal life now.

If you add a word and create a lie, God will reprove you. You will be found a liar.

Revelation 22:12 behold, I come quickly; and my reward is with me, to give every man according as his work shall be. 22:13 I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end, the first and the last. 22:14 Blessed are they that do his commandments, that they may have right to the tree of life, and may enter in through the gates into the city. 22:15 For without are dogs, and sorcerers, and whoremongers, and murderers, and idolaters, and whosoever loves and makes a lie. 22:16 I Jesus have sent mine angel to testify unto you these things in the churches.

The problem with being a liar is that you cannot enter into Zion, the city of God. A liar cannot eat of the tree of life and have eternal life. Those who love a lie are those who believe a lie and continue to do so even when told the truth. Those who make a lie are those adding words to what God said. If you read the scriptures as they are written you have life. If you corrupt the scriptures by adding words, you let satan steal what God gave you. If you hear the lie rather than what God actually said, you will die.

We often don't do it intentionally. We read the verse and hear, he that believes on me will have everlasting life. Because the lie is so engrained in what we have believed, we don't notice we added words to the verse when we were reading it. We automatically conform what we hear to what we believe because we think we know the truth. We don't see the error we are making unless Jesus stops us and says, read it again. He that believes on me has everlasting life. Jesus shows us when we are reading and adding words, Jesus shows us when we have misunderstood scripture. Jesus teaches us to see and hear the truth. That is why spending hours with Jesus as your only teacher, being a disciple, is the only way to be free. Jesus is a good teacher. Jesus speaks only the truth. You need his correction to remove lies.

Your teachers in the past taught you what they had been taught, and if they had been taught a lie and they didn't see

it and correct it, they unwittingly passed it on to you. They didn't mean to mislead you, but they did. A wise person examines the scriptures to see if what they have been told is true. Jesus is our wisdom. If you listen to other people more than you listen to Jesus, you will have more errors than truth in what you believe. If you live believing the lie is the truth, you are calling evil good, and you will die because of the darkness in you.

The word of God is pure. There is no darkness in it. The Greek and Hebrew words of scripture are pure. God has guarded and kept his written words, the scriptures, so they have been carried accurately through the generations. I did not say every translation of the word is pure. When you read an English bible or a Spanish bible or a Russian bible you are reading how a translator chose to express in another language the Greek and Hebrew scriptures.

I read the King James Version of the bible, which is an English translation. And I have an interlinear Hebrew – Greek – English bible so I can see the original scriptures the King James Version was translated from.

Greek and Hebrew words have rich meanings. To convey what is said in one Greek word often takes several English words. It is not uncommon for the translator to have correctly worded a verse and yet not have conveyed the entire meaning of what was originally said. And it is also not uncommon for me, even though I have English as my first language, to not know the full meaning of the English words the translator chose to use.

When I am reading scripture, God often says, look up that word in the dictionary. I have Strong's dictionary so I can look up what Greek and Hebrew words mean. I have Webster's dictionary so I can look up what English words mean. (I use the 4 volume interlinear bible edited by Jay P. Green, Sr. which has the Strong's number above each word to make the dictionary searches easier).

God's word is pure. God's word is precise. God's word is elegant. God knows what you understand in the scriptures and what you have not yet seen. God is a patient teacher. He will guide you to see and grasp and comprehend what he has said. The scriptures are the words of a good Father to his sons and daughters. God wants you to receive all the treasures and blessings in his word.

Foundations

Romans 2:6 God will render to every man according to his deeds:

2:7 To them who by patient continuance in well doing seek for glory and honor and immortality – eternal life:

2:8 But unto them that are contentious, and do not obey the truth, but obey unrighteousness – indignation and wrath,
2:9 tribulation and anguish, upon every soul of man that does evil, of the Jew first, and also of the Gentile;

2:10 But glory, honor, and peace, to every man that works good, to the Jew first, and also to the Gentile:

2:11 For there is no respect of persons with God.

Those who seek glory and honor and immortality, receive eternal life. Those who seek, find. They receive the immortality they were seeking.

How do they receive eternal life? They receive glory, honor and peace.

Men fell from glory when they sinned. In baptism we are made righteousness. We receive our glory back. God is the God of Glory. When you receive the Holy Spirit, glory dwells in you.

Honor is to be a Priest and King.

Peace with God is what gives you eternal life. Your sins are washed away in baptism. You receive the free gift of righteousness. Because there is no more sin, there is no more wrath of God, there is no more judgment, there is no more death. You are reconciled to God. You have peace with God. You have life and nothing disturbs that life.

Jesus saves us from sin

Matthew 1:21 you shall call his name JESUS: for he shall save his people from their sins.

We are saved from something specific. We are saved from our sins. Why does it matter that we are saved from our sins?

Romans 5:12 by one man sin entered into the world, and death by sin; and so death passed upon all men, for that all have sinned.

Death follows sin. Adam lived an unending life until the day he disobeyed God. Adam sinned and, as a result, he died. Because all Adam's children were born with his nature, all mankind also eventually sinned, and we also died.

Acts 22:16 And now why do you tarry? Arise, and be baptized, and wash away your sins, calling on the name of the Lord.

When we are baptized, our sins are washed away. All our sins. No sin remains. We are made completely clean. We come out of baptism with the gift of righteousness.

Mark 16:16 He that believes and is baptized shall be saved.

2 Timothy 1:10 our Savior Jesus Christ has abolished death, and has brought life and immortality to light through the gospel

What is salvation? You are saved from your sins.

Jesus saves us from our sins. Without sin, death has nothing to follow. We now once again have unending physical life. Life that has no end is immortality.

We are saved when we are baptized. By our death in baptism, we are freed from sin.

God has translated us into heaven

Colossians 1:13 the Father has delivered us from the power of darkness, and has translated us into the kingdom of his dear Son: 1:14 in whom we have redemption through his blood, even the forgiveness of sins.

God did not say he has moved us, he said translated. Why? Translate – to convey into heaven without death. God's words are pure. When you listen carefully to what God says you see great beauty. Translated is past tense. It is something which is finished.

God has delivered us from the power of darkness and has conveyed us into heaven without death into the kingdom of his dear Son.

We are translated when we are baptized. We are now in the kingdom of Jesus.

God has redeems us

Psalms 49:6 They that trust in their wealth, and boast themselves in the multitude of their riches, 49:7 none of them can by any means redeem his brother, 49:9 that he should still live forever, and not see corruption.

Here is another useful definition.

What is redemption? You live forever and do not see corruption.

We have redemption through the blood of Jesus. Jesus redeems us so we live forever and do not see corruption. Jesus gives us immortality and incorruptibility.

Adam sinned and died. Now, through Jesus, God undoes what Adam did. God washes away our sin, and then God gives us back immortality. We are now righteous and alive forever in the kingdom of Jesus on earth.

We are redeemed when we are baptized. In baptism, the blood Jesus shed covers our sin.

Hebrews 9:12 by his own blood Jesus Christ entered in once into the holy place, having obtained **eternal redemption** for us.

Atonement is an event. Jesus entered into the holy place in heaven with his own blood.

Events have a date on the calendar. Events divide scripture. The day Adam sinned was an event. From that day on man died. The day Jesus made atonement for us is an event. Our sins were taken away. From that day on man could believe in Jesus and once again have everlasting life.

By believing in Jesus and being baptized, we receive back what Adam lost – righteousness and everlasting life on the earth.

This is why the saints of the old testament could be made righteous but would still die. Jesus hadn't gone to the cross yet. They had not yet been redeemed. They did not yet have everlasting life. When Jesus poured out his blood on the cross, everything changed. We are now on the other side of the cross and resurrection.

Now when people come to God in baptism we receive salvation, being made clean of sin, being made righteous, and we are also redeemed. Redemption gives us immortality, eternal life, and also makes us incorruptible. We are redeemed from the pit of corruption, from death, and will never enter it again.

We also live incorruptible. Old Testament Israel corrupted themselves by going after other gods, by worshiping idols. We won't make that error. God gives us the gift of incorruptibility. We are established in righteousness. We are no longer vulnerable to falling away from God. We won't worship any of the gods of men. Nor will we worship or serve mammon – money – for the love of money is the root of all evil. We will always worship and serve God our Father and our Lord Jesus Christ.

God gives us life

Hebrews 5:8 Though Jesus were a Son, yet he learned obedience by the things which he suffered; 5:9 and being made perfect, he became the author of **eternal salvation** unto all them that obey him; 5:10 called of God a high priest after the order of Melchisedec.

Isaiah 38:17 thou has in love to my soul delivered it from the pit of corruption: for thou has cast all my sins behind thy back.

Titus 2:14 our Savior Jesus Christ gave himself for us, that he might redeem us from all iniquity, and purify unto himself a peculiar people, zealous of good works.

1 John 5:11 God has given to us eternal life, and this life is in his Son. 5:12 He that has the Son has life.

2 John 1:9 He that abides in the doctrine of Christ, he has both the Father and the Son.

John 5:24 [Jesus said,] Truly, Truly, I say unto you, He that hears my word, and believes on him that sent me, has everlasting life, and shall not come into condemnation; but is passed from death unto life.

We have passed from death to life. It is past tense. We have moved from death over into life. Being a sinner carried a death sentence. We were in death. Our bodies were going to stop breathing and return to dust. God, through what Jesus did, changed us and moved us out of death. We are now righteous. We are now in life. We have received eternal salvation and eternal redemption.

God has given us eternal life. It does not say God will give us eternal life. It says God has given us eternal life. This move out of death into life has happened. It is finished. We are in life right now.

Satan says to us you are going to die and then you will have eternal life. Satan tells us we are still going to die. There is no truth in satan. He is a thief. The thief comes to steal, kill,

and destroy.

Satan wants to kill us. He no longer has the power of sin and the right to kill us. But if he can deceive us he can still get us to die. The astonishing thing is that we let him. We believe his lies and we die. We are the children of God with all the rights of a God and we let a thief rob from us our life. We are the ones laying down our life by our false beliefs. Satan can't take our life from us. The Father isn't taking our life from us. The Father is the one who gave us everlasting life. The gifts of God are irrevocable. It's our choice. If you want to live – live. We believe the truth, we see God our Father has given us eternal life through Jesus, and we remain alive. When satan says you'll die, we reply, you're lying. We don't have to put up with the lies. Truth sets us free. Truth sets us free of sin and free of death and free of all the lies. Simply know the truth and stand there alive.

Jesus redeemed us from all iniquity. All iniquity means none remains. Jesus purifies us. It means we are now holy. Pure. Without spot or blemish. Our spirit, soul and body are completely free of evil. Our righteousness is perfect. We are holy. We are saints.

Jesus didn't partially save us. It is a physical saving and a saving of our soul. The Lord is for the body and the body is for the Lord. Jesus forgives all our sins, heals all our diseases, and redeems our life from the pit of corruption. Psalm 103 is a beautiful list of rewards we receive from the Lord. We receive righteous, we receive health, and we receive life. It isn't 2 out of 3. It is all of all of them.

Jesus made us whole. That is what it means to be saved. What is wrong is made right.

In AD 33, when Jesus went to the cross, all that was wrong with us, God laid upon his son. Jesus had no sin, he had no sickness; Jesus had perfect life. God took our sin, God took our disease, God took the death working in our body, and

he laid it upon his son. God took it away from us in order to place it upon his son.

The punishments of sin, the diseases listed in the curse of the law, can't be on two people at the same time. The punishment follows the sin. When God took the sin off of us and put it upon Jesus, God moved the punishment, all the sickness, off of us and put it upon Jesus. Jesus was made weak, Jesus was made sick, Jesus was cursed, Jesus was sentenced to die. We were set free of sin. We were set free of disease. We were set free of death. As Jesus took upon himself our sin, our disease, and our death, we were in turn being set free of them. God placed all that was corrupt in us upon Jesus at the cross.

Jesus has the sin, therefore Jesus has the punishment. You have no sin, therefore you are healed. That is righteous judgment. Jesus is the one who brings righteous judgment to victory. What is right is what we have. We have justice.

We are righteous, not because we did something. God gave us grace. God moved our sin onto Jesus. We are healthy, not because we did something. The punishment of sickness, the curse of the law, followed the sin and moved onto Jesus. We are alive, not because we did something. The death sentence for our sins moved onto Jesus.

God has made us righteous. God has healed us. God has given us life. It's finished.

God did a complete work of transferring what was wrong in us onto Jesus, in the day of the cross. The cross is an event. It has a calendar date it occurred. It is in the past. It is finished. Now when something looks wrong in our body, we look at the cross. Father, I see you healed me. Thank you. And our body returns to health and wholeness. Thanksgiving is acknowledging what God has done. You know it is done, because you see what Jesus did at the cross. There is nothing else for God to do. All that remains is simply thank you. We see the cross and what Jesus did

and we say thank you. God has forgiven all our sins, healed all our diseases, and redeemed our life from the pit. God has been good to us through his son Jesus. The just by faith shall live. Faith is seeing what has happened. Faith is believing what is written in scripture.

Jesus is a righteous King. Jesus gives us what is just. We have no sin. Therefore our body is healthy and whole. To leave us cursed, Jesus would be ignoring what he himself did on our behalf. Jesus has come to undo the works of the devil. Jesus by his own death purged our sins. Jesus made us righteous. And as the righteous King with all authority in heaven and on earth, Jesus give us health and makes our body whole. Health is a gift. Life is a gift. They are free gifts God gives us through Jesus.

I am blessed by God. I am rewarded for being righteous. I'm blessed, I'm rewarded, for the righteousness God himself just gave me! I believed in Jesus and got baptized. That's all I did. Because I chose to trust in Jesus, God changed me. God made me righteous, healed me, and gave me life that never ends. Now I get an eternity of being blessed by God. The good news is amazing.

We are seated in heaven

Ephesians 2:4 God, who is rich in mercy, for his great love wherewith he loved us, 2:5 Even when we were dead in sins, has quickened us together with Christ, (by grace you are saved;) 2:6 And has raised us up together, and made us sit together in heavenly places in Christ Jesus: 2:7 That in the ages to come he might show the exceeding riches of his grace in his kindness toward us through Christ Jesus.

2:8 For by grace are you saved through faith; and that not of yourselves: it is the gift of God: 2:9 Not of works, lest any man should boast. 2:10 For we are his workmanship, created in Christ Jesus unto good works, which God has before ordained that we should walk in them.

Read it carefully because these are things which God has already done. It says has quickened, past tense, not will quicken. It says has raised us up, past tense, not will raise us up.

Has quickened us – made us alive – together with Christ.
Has raised us up together with Christ.

Is Jesus alive or dead right now? He's alive forevermore. So are you. You have a qualitatively different level of life than man around you. You are alive forevermore. Is Jesus exalted right now? Yes, he's seated beside the Father in heaven. So are you. You have unhindered access to the Father for you are seated in his presence.

You have a question? Ask the Father. You have a need? Ask the Father. That is the point of being in the presence of God. You have a conversation. You have a life together. And because you are seated with Jesus on the throne of heaven, you rule. What you say occurs on earth. What you bind is bound, what you loose, is free. You have the authority of the kingdom of God. The Father showed Jesus what he was doing, and Jesus did what the Father was doing. We live our life doing the same. We live a life of heaven now, ruling over the earth, because that's what Jesus is doing, so that is what we are doing. We are together. Jesus is glorified. So are we. The cross and resurrection are in our past history. Now we are glorified. Now we rule.

We were crucified with Christ. Our bodies got hammered to that wood. We died. We got buried in a tomb. God had to resurrect us to the same degree he had to resurrect Jesus. We now have heavenly bodies, perfect and whole, filled with life. In baptism we are experience everything Jesus did. We are participating in the baptism, cross, death, burial, resurrection, and exaltation to the throne, of our Lord Jesus Christ.

We are joined to Jesus. Because Jesus is alive, so are we.

Because Jesus is glorified, so are we. Because Jesus is seated on a throne, so are we.

God did these things in AD 33 – quickened us, raised us, seated us with Jesus in heaven – so that he was then free to do something else: that in the ages to come God might show the exceeding riches of his grace in his kindness toward us through Christ Jesus.

What is God doing now? Blessing us. Showing us kindness. God is able to do abundantly more than we ask or think – he’s our Father and we are reconciled to him. We are no longer limiting God by having a sin nature. Our prayers and God’s answers flow unhindered. We are good. We can handle receiving good gifts. God is teaching us how to rule earth, to be Kings.

We are God’s workmanship, created in Christ Jesus unto good works, which God has before ordained that we should walk in them.

God ordained that Jesus would come and save the world. Jesus did so perfectly. God has ordained that we should walk in good works. With our Father’s help, our good works will also come out perfect.

We are free from sin

1 John 5:1 Whosoever believes that Jesus is the Christ is born of God.

1 John 3:9 Whosoever is born of God does not commit sin; for his seed remains in him: and he cannot sin, because he is born of God.

Luke 8:11 Now the parable is this: The seed is the word of God.

We know from Jesus' explanation of the parable that when he refers to seed, he is speaking about the word of God. It is also correct to say Jesus himself is the seed of God, as he is the offspring of God, the Son of God.

Thus this amazing verse can be read as: Whosoever is born of God does not commit sin; for the word of God remains in him, Jesus remains in him: and he cannot sin, because he is born of God.

Do you see the breathtaking beauty of what God has done for us through Jesus?

John 1:12-13 as many as received Jesus, to them he gave power to become the sons of God, even to them that believe on his name: who were born of God.

Adam was righteous and had unending life until the day he sinned. Because he sinned, he die. God didn't just clean us from our sins, restore us to righteousness and unending life, but leave us as a man, vulnerable to sinning again. God washed away our sins, restored us to righteousness and unending life, and then God went a step further and changed us from being a man into a child of God. God gave us the power to become the sons of God. We are born of God. We are like God, always righteous. We are fixed in righteousness.

God has saved us from the sins we have committed in the past – God washed them away. And God has saved us from the sins we would have committed in the future by

removing our vulnerability to sin.

God doesn't sin. There is no evil in God. God is righteous and good always. God is alive, always. God removed our vulnerability to sin by giving us his own nature. God made us like himself by giving to us Jesus. Jesus is abiding in us. God is abiding in us. We are born a child of God. That is a very big deal.

There is only one warning from the Father. Jesus is the author of eternal salvation to all them that obey him. Obedience. We are Gods, sons of the Most High. We are free to make our own choices. If we choose to disobey Jesus, everything Jesus has done for us isn't going to help us. We receive what Jesus does for us by obedience to Jesus.

Satan's error is disobedience. Satan refused to abide in the truth. Adam's error was disobedience. Adam did not obey God. A baptized Christian can make the same error. A Christian can disobey Jesus. You can obey Jesus, or you can disobey Jesus. Jesus rewards you according to your works.

2 John 1:9 Whosoever transgresses, and abides not in the doctrine of Christ, has not God. He that abides in the doctrine of Christ, he has both the Father and the Son.

What happens if you choose to disobey Jesus? If you persist in ignoring Jesus' words? Jesus leaves.

A child of God obeys God because obedience is the right thing to do – obedience is showing your righteousness. A rebellious son is wicked, a child of the devil – it is his nature to disobey God.

We are born infants and children have immaturity in them. Jesus will discipline you to get your attention. Jesus will give you time to repent, to obey him, to choose to be righteous. But if you persist in ignoring his words to you, then Jesus will give you what you want. He will leave. And if he leaves, you will die. You will die not because of the

sin of rebellion, for Jesus forgave you all your sins, you will die because you have no life abiding in you. Without Jesus with you, you die. Without Jesus, everyone dies.

You show by your actions who you are. You are either a child of God or you are a child of the devil.

Hebrews 10:26 For if we sin willfully after that we have received the knowledge of the truth, there remains no more sacrifice for sins, 10:27 But a certain fearful looking for of judgment and fiery indignation, which shall devour the adversaries.

10:28 He that despised Moses' law died without mercy under two or three witnesses: 10:29 Of how much sorer punishment, suppose you, shall he be thought worthy, who has trodden under foot the Son of God, and has counted the blood of the covenant, wherewith he was sanctified, an unholy thing, and has done despite unto the Spirit of grace? 10:30 For we know him that has said, Vengeance belongs unto me, I will recompense, said the Lord. And again, The Lord shall judge his people. 10:31 It is a fearful thing to fall into the hands of the living God.

We are raised up with a heavenly body

1 Corinthians 15:34 **Awake to righteousness, and sin not;** for some have not the knowledge of God: I speak this to your shame.

15:35 But some man will say, How are the dead raised up? and with what body do they come? 15:36 Thou fool, that which thou sows is not quickened, except it die: 15:37 And that which thou sows, thou sows not that body that shall be, but bare grain, it may chance of wheat, or of some other grain: 15:38 But God gives it a body as it has pleased him, and to every seed his own body.

15:39 All flesh is not the same flesh: but there is one kind of flesh of men, another flesh of beasts, another of fishes, and another of birds. 15:40 There are also celestial bodies, and bodies terrestrial: but the glory of the celestial is one, and the glory of the terrestrial is another. 15:41 There is one glory of the sun, and another glory of the moon, and another glory of the stars: for one star differs from another star in glory.

15:42 So also is the resurrection of the dead. It is sown in corruption; it is raised in incorruption: 15:43 It is sown in dishonor; it is raised in glory: it is sown in weakness; it is raised in power: 15:44 It is sown a natural body; it is raised a spiritual body. There is a natural body, and there is a spiritual body.

15:45 And so it is written, The first man Adam was made a living soul; the last Adam was made a quickening spirit.

15:46 Howbeit that was not first which is spiritual, but that which is natural; and afterward that which is spiritual.

15:47 The first man is of the earth, earthy; the second man is the Lord from heaven.

15:48 As is the earthy, such are they also that are earthy: and as is the heavenly, such are they also that are heavenly.

15:49 And as we have borne the image of the earthy, we

shall also bear the image of the heavenly.

15:50 Now this I say, brethren, that flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of God; neither does corruption inherit incorruption.

15:51 Behold, I show you a mystery; We shall not all sleep, but we shall all be changed, 15:52 In a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump: for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed.

15:53 For this corruptible must put on incorruption, and this mortal must put on immortality.

15:54 So when this corruptible shall have put on incorruption, and this mortal shall have put on immortality, then shall be brought to pass the saying that is written, Death is swallowed up in victory.

15:55 O death, where is thy sting? O grave, where is thy victory? 15:56 The sting of death is sin; and the strength of sin is the law.

15:57 But thanks be to God, which gives us the victory through our Lord Jesus Christ.

God gives us the victory over death through our Lord Jesus Christ. It's a wonderful gift. How God gives us this victory is elegant.

Man is flesh and blood. Man can't inherit the kingdom of God. Man is a liar. Man is corrupt. A corrupt man can't inherit incorruption. Man has to die, the seed sown has to die. Only then can what is new appear. This is why we are change in baptism and given a new nature. We die as a man and are born again a child of God. A child of God can inherit the kingdom of God. The kingdom of God is a God's normal residence.

Look at the scriptures and the process it outlines. We are a man who bears the image of Adam. We are a living soul. We have a natural earthly body and in us is corruption,

dishonor and weakness. We enter baptism and we die as a man. We are born again a child of God. We are raised in baptism out of the pit of corruption, out of death. We are raised a life-giving spirit. We now have a spiritual body. We are raised in incorruption, glory and power. We bear the image of the Lord from heaven, Jesus.

In baptism, we have died as a man and been born a child of God. In baptism we have been saved and redeemed. Saved from our sins, we are forever righteous. Redeemed, we live forever and do not see corruption. We have immortality and incorruptibility. All those who have been baptized have put on Jesus Christ. The corruptible man has put on incorruption, the mortal has put on immortality. We have put on the image of the Lord from heaven, Jesus. God has conformed us to Jesus.

Jesus has been exalted and glorified and is seated on the throne at the right hand of the Father in heaven. Where are we? With Jesus. God has translated us into heaven into the kingdom of his Son Jesus. We have inherited the kingdom of God.

It all happens in baptism. In a moment, in the twinkling of an eye. God has changed us. We go from being a man, to a son of man, to a son of God. We go from being a liar, to one who has sinned and repented, to being born of God. We rise out of baptism a God, a child of the Most High.

It is happening at the last trumpet. The trumpet sounds on the day of atonement. The day of atonement is the most holy day of the Jewish year. It begins to sound when the offering is made and it sounds until the offering is complete. Atonement is the Lamb of God being sacrificed for sin. Atonement is Jesus pouring out his blood for our sins.

The last atonement ever made for man occurred the day Jesus went to the cross, poured out his blood, and died for us. The last trumpet sounds as the final atonement is made.

Jesus by himself has purged our sins. There will never be another offering for sin in all eternity. By one sacrifice Jesus has purged all our sins.

In baptism we are crucified with Christ. We die and are buried as men. Baptism is our last day. We rise out of baptism Gods, without sin, righteous forever, having receive eternal life. We are now immortal. Gods don't have days, we simply are forever alive, without beginning or end of days.

When you are baptized the last trumpet is sounding. It begins to sound when you enter the water and sounds until you are raised out of the water. You are now a new creation, the old is gone, all is new. You are a child of God; all is of God. The trumpet announces your arrival. It's a herald announcing the birth of the King's son, the King's daughter.

What is dishonor? It is sown in dishonor; it is raised in glory. What is dishonor? When we break the law we dishonor God. Men fell from glory when they sinned. We enter baptism a sinner, one who has dishonored God. We are raised in glory. We are raised righteous, restored to glory. We now keep the law which is summed up in the two commands, love God, and love our neighbors as ourselves.

Our bodies are different now. We no longer have an earthly body, a natural body. Now we have a spiritual body, a heavenly body. We are no longer a man. We are now a child of God.

God has taken us out of the kingdom of darkness and translated us into heaven into the kingdom of his son Jesus. In order to be in heaven you have to have a heavenly body. Flesh and blood, the earthly body of a man, cannot inherit the kingdom of God. We are now a child of God in a heavenly body.

Galatians 3:26 For you are all the children of God by faith in Christ Jesus.

3:27 For as many of you as have been baptized into Christ have put on Christ.

We are Gods

Psalm 82:6 I have said, You are gods; and all of you are children of the most High.

This verse is another definition in scripture to add to those in Numbers 23:19.

Man is a liar.

A son of man is a man who sins and repents.

God is perfect. God never lies and God never sins. God is not a man. God is not a son of man.

A child of God is a God. A child of God is not a man. A child of God is not a son of man.

Everything gives birth after its own kind. God gives birth to Gods. When you look at God, you are looking at your Father. You are looking at who you are. You are a child of God. His traits and characteristics, what make him God, are your traits and characteristics. God is good. God is holy. God is perfect. God is righteous. In God there is no evil. In God there is no darkness. God is light. God is true. Those are descriptions also of a child of God. You are a child of light.

God is spirit. What is born of spirit is spirit. A child of God is someone baptized in water and baptized in Holy Spirit. Jesus says of the Father, a body you have prepared for me. God gives us a spiritual body so we can be seen. Jesus is the image of the invisible God. Man looks like God, for man is made in the image of God. It is not God who look like man.

John 10:22 And it was at Jerusalem the feast of the dedication, and it was winter. 10:23 And Jesus walked in the temple in Solomon's porch. 10:24 Then came the Jews round about him, and said unto him, How long do thou make us to doubt? If thou be the Christ, tell us plainly.

10:25 Jesus answered them, I told you, and you believed not: the works that I do in my Father's name, they bear witness of me. 10:26 But you believe not, because you are not of my sheep, as I said unto you.

10:27 My sheep hear my voice, and I know them, and they follow me: 10:28 And I give unto them eternal life; and they shall never perish, neither shall any man pluck them out of my hand. 10:29 My Father, which gave them me, is greater than all; and no man is able to pluck them out of my Father's hand. 10:30 I and my Father are one.

10:31 Then the Jews took up stones again to stone him.

10:32 Jesus answered them, Many good works have I showed you from my Father; for which of those works do you stone me?

10:33 The Jews answered him, saying, For a good work we stone thee not; but for blasphemy; and because that thou, being a man, makes thyself God.

10:34 Jesus answered them, Is it not written in your law, I said, You are gods? 10:35 If he called them gods, unto whom the word of God came, and the scripture cannot be broken; 10:36 Say you of him, whom the Father has sanctified, and sent into the world, Thou blasphemest; because I said, I am the Son of God?

10:37 If I do not the works of my Father, believe me not. 10:38 But if I do, though you believe not me, believe the works: that you may know, and believe, that the Father is in me, and I in him.

Jesus said about himself, I am the Son of God. I and my Father are one.

The Pharisees complained – You, being a man, make thyself God.

Jesus then quotes Psalm 82. Is it not written, You are Gods?

You are gods; and all of you are children of the most High.

Jesus called them Gods to whom the word of God came.

When someone hears about Jesus and the forgiveness of sins, hears about the cross and the resurrection, the word of God has come to that person.

Salvation changes us from being a man to being a God. We die as a man. We are born again a God. We, being a man, make ourselves Gods. We do so by hearing the word of God, believing in Jesus, and being baptized. We become children of the Most High. We become Gods. It happens in baptism.

The word of God changes a man into a God. That is the power of the word of God.

Jesus isn't lying to us. We are Gods. We are holy, sanctified, children of the Most High. We are Gods.

Satan is the one who says to us, you're a man, not a God. What's all this nonsense about being a God? Look in mirror. You're a man. And we believe satan and we die as a man. It astonishes me how willing we are to listen to satan rather than God.

God's believe the word of God. That's the simple reality. Those who believe the word of God is true are those who are Gods. Those who reject what the word says will die. They let themselves be deceived. They let themselves be robbed by a liar. Don't let that happen to you. Read the word of God. Jesus tells you the truth, always. It is good to be with Jesus. You come away knowing you are a God and not a man, that you are good and not evil. You know the truth and are not deceived by a liar. You can then enjoy living accordingly.

John 8:42 Jesus said unto them, If God were your Father, you would love me: for I proceeded forth and came from God; neither came I of myself, but he sent me. 8:43 Why do you not understand my speech? even because you cannot hear my word.

8:44 You are of your father the devil, and the lusts of your father you will do. He was a murderer from the beginning, and abode not in the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he speaks a lie, he speaks of his own: for he is a liar, and the father of it.

Satan is a liar. There is no truth in satan. Satan has children like himself. Those who speak lies.

You can be found a liar by adding to what God said. You can also be found a liar by not abiding in the truth. The word of God is the truth. Jesus, speaking to the Father about his disciples, says in John 17:17 Sanctify them through thy truth: thy word is truth.

Sanctify – make them holy – through thy truth, the word of God. Those who abide in the word of God learn they have been changed.

You, being a man, make thyself God. It is a true statement about what believers in Jesus are doing. We are men, who by faith in Jesus and obedience to repent and be baptized, are making ourselves Gods. The word of God is able to change a man into a God, a child of the Most High.

In baptism, God has killed the man, the liar you were, and God has given birth to a God. We are perfect. We never lie, and we never sin. We are righteous. We have been sanctified. We have been made holy.

We are born righteous. Righteousness is a birthright. A gift you receive by birth. Your only part in being made righteous is the choice to believe in Jesus. You chose to stop being a sinner and to become righteous. You chose to be baptized. God kills the man, the liar you were, and gives birth to a God. You come out of baptism a God, a child of

the Most High. You are born righteous. You show you are a child of God by how you live. The righteous do righteousness. You listen to God, you obey your Father, because you are righteous.

The lamb's book of life

Psalm 69:28 Let them be blotted out of the book of the living, and not be written with the righteous.

Who are written in the Lamb's book of life? The righteous.

Who are blotted out of the Lamb's book of life? The unrighteous. Sinners. Liars.

You are written in the Lamb's book of life because you are worthy of living forever, because you are righteous. You are a child of a righteous Father. Your works show you are righteous.

Revelation warns that Jesus will blot out of the Lamb's book of life those who live unrighteous lives, those who do not cease from sin. They have shown they are not a child of God, but a child of the devil. The devil is one who sins. The children of the devil are ones who sin like their father. Their works show they are wicked.

We are complete in Jesus

Colossians 2:6 As you have therefore received Christ Jesus the Lord, so walk you in him: 2:7 Rooted and built up in him, and established in the faith, as you have been taught, abounding therein with thanksgiving.

2:8 Beware lest any man spoil you through philosophy and vain deceit, after the tradition of men, after the rudiments of the world, and not after Christ.

2:9 For in him dwells all the fullness of the Godhead bodily. 2:10 And you are complete in him, which is the head of all principality and power: 2:11 In whom also you are circumcised with the circumcision made without hands, in putting off the body of the sins of the flesh by the circumcision of Christ:

2:12 Buried with him in baptism, wherein also you are risen with him through the faith of the operation of God, who has raised him from the dead.

2:13 And you, being dead in your sins and the uncircumcision of your flesh, has he quickened together with him, having forgiven you all trespasses; 2:14 Blotting out the handwriting of ordinances that was against us, which was contrary to us, and took it out of the way, nailing it to his cross; 2:15 And having spoiled principalities and powers, he made a show of them openly, triumphing over them in it.

We were buried with Jesus in baptism. In baptism we were also raised with him. We are alive together with Jesus. We are complete in Jesus.

Beware of the doctrines of men. They will spoil you – plunder, rob, do damage, harm.

This fight against the doctrine of men starts from day one of your life as a Christian.

John 11:25 Jesus said to Martha, I am the resurrection, and the life: he that believes in me, though he were dead, yet

shall he live: 11:26 And whosoever lives and believes in me shall never die. Believe thou this?

New Christian: “Hey, I read good news. Jesus says whoever lives and believes in me shall never die.”

Everyone around new Christian: “Oh, that means that you die first and go to heaven and then you won’t die anymore.”

This lie we have been taught, it doesn’t become true by the multitude of people who keep repeating the lie. It’s a false doctrine of men and will always be a lie.

John 6:47 [Jesus speaking] Truly, Truly, I say unto you, He that believes on me has everlasting life.

Jesus says those who believe have everlasting life. Have is a present tense verb. Have means you have it now. Will have means you will have it sometime in the future, but you do not have it now. Jesus says you have life now and that life will last forever.

The only way to get rid of the doctrine of men is:

New Christian: “I’m going to believe what Jesus said. So I’m planning my 200th birthday.”

This courage to believe the word of God in the face of what others say shows righteousness at work. The ability to repent and say I misread this, I was deceived, is also showing righteousness at work. The wise examine the scriptures to see if what they have heard is true, they also study to see if what they believe is true. The wise have open eyes and love the scriptures. It is truth which protects you from error, whatever its source.

Proverbs 29:25 The fear of man brings a snare: but whosoever puts his trust in the Lord shall be safe.

We are servants of righteousness

Romans 6:3 Know you not, that so many of us as were baptized into Jesus Christ were baptized into his death? 6:4 Therefore we are buried with him by baptism into death: that like as Christ was raised up from the dead by the glory of the Father, even so we also should walk in newness of life.

6:5 For if we have been planted together in the likeness of his death, we shall be also in the likeness of his resurrection:

6:6 Knowing this, that our old man is crucified with him, that the body of sin might be destroyed, that henceforth we should not serve sin.

6:7 For he that is dead is freed from sin.

6:8 Now if we be dead with Christ, we believe that we shall also live with him:

6:9 Knowing that Christ being raised from the dead dies no more; death has no more dominion over him. 6:10 For in that he died, he died unto sin once: but in that he lives, he lives unto God.

6:11 Likewise reckon you also yourselves to be dead indeed unto sin, but alive unto God through Jesus Christ our Lord. 6:12 Let not sin therefore reign in your mortal body, that you should obey it in the lusts thereof. 6:13 Neither yield you your members as instruments of unrighteousness unto sin: but yield yourselves unto God, as those that are alive from the dead, and your members as instruments of righteousness unto God. 6:14 For sin shall not have dominion over you: for you are not under the law, but under grace.

6:15 What then? shall we sin, because we are not under the law, but under grace? God forbid. 6:16 Know you not, that to whom you yield yourselves servants to obey, his servants you are to whom you obey; whether of sin unto death, or of

obedience unto righteousness? 6:17 But God be thanked, that you were the servants of sin, but you have obeyed from the heart that form of doctrine which was delivered you.

6:18 Being then made free from sin, you became the servants of righteousness.

6:19 I speak after the manner of men because of the infirmity of your flesh: for as you have yielded your members servants to uncleanness and to iniquity unto iniquity; even so now yield your members servants to righteousness unto holiness.

6:20 For when you were the servants of sin, you were free from righteousness. 6:21 What fruit had you then in those things whereof you are now ashamed? for the end of those things is death.

6:22 But now being made free from sin, and become servants to God, you have your fruit unto holiness, and the end everlasting life.

6:23 For the wages of sin is death; but the gift of God is eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord.

We have been freed from sin – this is such a huge deal.

Jesus died to sin once. So did we. Baptism is our death to sin. Baptism is an event. We come out of baptism set free from sin. We have no more sin nature. We are righteous and have the righteous nature of God.

Sin has no dominion over us. Sin can't tell us what to do. We rule over sin. We trample it under our feet. Jesus did not sin because he refused to give place to satan, he refused to accept a lie or do what was wrong. Jesus knew the word and obeyed the Father.

We are now servants of God. We have good fruit to holiness. And we have the end, everlasting life. Jesus is the end. We have Jesus giving us everlasting life.

John 14:6 Jesus said to him, I am the way, the truth, and the life

Jesus is everything to us. The way back to God our Father. The one who tells us the truth. And the one who gives us life.

The children of God are manifest

1 John 3:6 **Whosoever abides in him sins not:** whosoever sins has not seen him, neither known him.

3:7 Little children, let no man deceive you: he that does righteousness is righteous, even as he is righteous.

3:8 **He that commits sin is of the devil;** for the devil sins from the beginning. For this purpose the Son of God was manifested, that he might destroy the works of the devil.

3:9 Whosoever is born of God does not commit sin; for his seed remains in him: and he cannot sin, because he is born of God.

3:10 **In this the children of God are manifest, and the children of the devil:** whosoever does not righteousness is not of God, neither he that loves not his brother.

3:11 For this is the message that you heard from the beginning, that we should love one another.

If the kingdom of God is within us and we do righteousness because we are righteous, the converse is also true. If the kingdom of darkness is within us we do wickedness because we are wicked. There is a kingdom of darkness, of sin, and a kingdom of light, of righteousness. The kingdom which dwells within us determines who we are and what we do. We are a sinner and we do wickedness, or we are righteous and we do righteousness. A corrupt tree cannot bear good fruit and a good tree cannot bear corrupt fruit. We are one or the other.

The gate between one kingdom and the other kingdom is baptism. Those who sit in darkness have seen a great light. The darkness has been overcome. God translates us from darkness into the light.

God calls all out of the darkness and into the light. Those who are in darkness because they were deceived hear Jesus' voice and they come to the light. Those who are wicked refuse to come into the light. God separates the

light from the darkness, the good from the evil.

Satan has corrupted man to be in his own image. Satan has made man full of darkness and wickedness, full of violence.

Jesus makes us into his own image. Jesus changes us into a God, a child of the Most High. We are changed into a child of light. God is the God of peace.

There are two kingdoms. Your choice is where you want to live.

The kingdom of God has defeated the kingdom of darkness. Good has overcome evil. We are seeing the kingdom of darkness go extinct and the kingdom of light, the children of God, being born to fill the earth.

Baptism – being born a child of God

John 3:1 There was a man of the Pharisees, named Nicodemus, a ruler of the Jews: 3:2 The same came to Jesus by night, and said unto him, Rabbi, we know that thou art a teacher come from God: for no man can do these miracles that thou does, except God be with him.

3:3 Jesus answered and said unto him, Truly, Truly, I say to you, except a man be born again, he cannot see the kingdom of God.

3:4 Nicodemus said unto him, How can a man be born when he is old? can he enter the second time into his mother's womb, and be born?

3:5 Jesus answered, Truly, Truly, I say to you, except a man be born of water and of the Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God.

3:6 That which is born of the flesh is flesh; and that which is born of the Spirit is spirit.

3:7 Marvel not that I said to you, You must be born again.

3:8 The wind blows where it will, and thou hears the sound thereof, but canst not tell whence it comes, and whither it goes: so is every one that is born of the Spirit.

3:9 Nicodemus answered and said to him, How can these things be?

3:10 Jesus answered and said to him, Art thou a master of Israel, and know not these things? 3:11 Truly, Truly, I say to you, We speak that we do know, and testify that we have seen; and you receive not our witness.

3:12 If I have told you earthly things, and you believe not, how shall you believe, if I tell you of heavenly things?

3:13 And no man has ascended up to heaven, but he that came down from heaven, even the Son of man which is in heaven.

3:14 And as Moses lifted up the serpent in the wilderness, even so must the Son of man be lifted up: 3:15 That whosoever believes in him should not perish, but have eternal life.

3:16 For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believes in him should not perish, but have everlasting life.

3:17 For God sent not his Son into the world to condemn the world; but that the world through him might be saved.

3:18 He that believes on him is not condemned: but he that believes not is condemned already, because he has not believed in the name of the only begotten Son of God.

3:19 And this is the condemnation, that light is come into the world, and men loved darkness rather than light, because their deeds were evil. 3:20 For every one that does evil hates the light, neither comes to the light, lest his deeds should be reproved. 3:21 But he that does truth comes to the light, that his deeds may be made manifest, that they are wrought in God.

Except a man be born again, he cannot see the kingdom of God.

Except a man be born of water and of the Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God.

You see the kingdom of God and then you enter the kingdom of God.

That which is born of the flesh is flesh; and that which is born of the Spirit is spirit.

Born of water is John's baptism, being immersed in water, going down into the water and coming back up out of the water. You fall back, you go down into death, are put into the tomb flat and not breathing, you rise up out of water in resurrection, you breathe again, you stand up. You are now washed clean of sin. You are a righteous son of man, you are a man who repents.

Born of the spirit is Jesus' baptism, he baptizes you in the Holy Spirit. You are born a God, you are a righteous son of God. What is born of spirit is spirit. You are now a life-giving spirit. You now speak the words of God because you are a God. Your words now have power. What you say happens. You receive power when the Holy Spirit comes upon you.

You are born of water by asking a believer to baptize you in water. You are born of the spirit by asking Jesus to baptize you in the Holy Spirit.

Luke 11:9 And I say unto you, Ask, and it shall be given you; seek, and you shall find; knock, and it shall be opened unto you. 11:10 For every one that asks receives; and he that seeks found; and to him that knocks it shall be opened.

11:11 If a son shall ask bread of any of you that is a father, will he give him a stone? or if he ask a fish, will he for a fish give him a serpent? 11:12 Or if he shall ask an egg, will he offer him a scorpion? 11:13 If you then, being evil, know how to give good gifts unto your children: how much more shall your heavenly Father give the Holy Spirit to them that ask him?

The Holy Spirit is holy. It means he is without sin. He is perfect and pure. He will always do what is right. And he will be with you always, so that you can be as he is – holy, without sin, perfect, and pure, knowing the truth and doing what is right. The Holy Spirit is your helper, your comforter. The Holy Spirit is God with you.

The Holy Spirit is the Spirit of Truth. To know the truth, you start by asking for the one is the truth. You ask the Father for the Holy Spirit. The Holy Spirit is a good gift. The Holy Spirit is God. When you ask the Father for the gift of the holy spirit, you are asking God to be with you always. What greater gift can the Father give you than himself? God is one. God is the Father, the Son Jesus, and the Holy Spirit. What you ask, you receive.

*

Baptism is regeneration

Acts 22:16 And now why do you tarry? Arise, and be baptized, and wash away your sins, calling on the name of the Lord.

Titus 3:5 according to his mercy he saved us, by the washing of regeneration, and renewing of the Holy Spirit; 3:6 which he shed on us abundantly through Jesus Christ our Savior; 3:7 that being justified by his grace, we should be made heirs according to the hope of eternal life.

1 Corinthians 6:11 you are washed, you are sanctified, you are justified in the name of the Lord Jesus, and by the Spirit of our God.

Baptism is regeneration. The washing away of our sins is the washing of regeneration.

Renewing is of the Holy Spirit. The Holy Spirit guides us into all truth. It is the Holy Spirit which teaches us what has occurred during baptism.

Birth is an event. We are born a child of God. We are no longer a man, we are now a child of God. We are born an infant, a babe in Christ. We need to grow and mature. Our growth comes from God. If we drink the milk of scriptures and eat the meat we grow and learn the truth and live forever righteous. If we are born, and then ignore the milk and meat of scripture, we will die from starvation, never knowing the truth of what Jesus has done for us. Without truth, we will remain conformed to the world thinking we are a man who dies, and so will die when we did not need to do so.

Communion

John 6:51 [Jesus is speaking] I am the living bread which came down from heaven: if any man eat of this bread, he shall live forever: and the bread that I will give is my flesh, which I will give for the life of the world.

6:53 Truly, Truly, I say unto you, except you eat the flesh of the Son of man, and drink his blood, you have no life in you. 6:54 Whosoever eats my flesh, and drinks my blood, has eternal life; and I will raise him up at the last day.

6:55 For my flesh is meat indeed, and my blood is drink indeed.

6:56 He that eats my flesh, and drinks my blood, dwells in me, and I in him.

6:57 As the living Father has sent me, and I live by the Father: so he that eats me, even he shall live by me.

6:58 This is that bread which came down from heaven: he that eats of this bread shall live forever.

Romans 5:8 But God commended his love toward us, in that, while we were yet sinners, Christ died for us. 5:9 Much more then, being now justified by his blood, we shall be saved from wrath through him. 5:10 For if, when we were enemies, we were reconciled to God by the death of his Son, much more, being reconciled, we shall be saved by his life. 5:11 And not only so, but we also joy in God through our Lord Jesus Christ, by whom we have now received the atonement.

Exodus 29:33 And they shall eat those things wherewith the atonement was made, to consecrate and to sanctify them.

Matthew 26:26 And as they were eating, Jesus took bread, and blessed it, and broke it, and gave it to the disciples, and said, Take, eat; this is my body.

26:27 And he took the cup, and gave thanks, and gave it to them, saying, Drink you all of it; 26:28 for this is my blood of the new testament, which is shed for many for the remission of sins.

26:29 But I say unto you, I will not drink henceforth of this fruit of the vine, until that day when I drink it new with you in my Father's kingdom.

In communion we partake of the flesh and blood of Jesus. We eat those things by which atonement was made for us. Jesus made his body an offering for our sins. Jesus has died for us; Jesus has atoned for us. When we eat of his offering, Jesus comes and abides in us and we abide in him. Communion gives us Jesus, and Jesus gives us life.

The cross is an event. Atonement is an event. Communion is also an event.

When does Jesus come and abide in you? When you take your first communion. By eating his flesh and drinking his blood you are accepting the atonement Jesus made on your behalf. You have washed away your sins in baptism, and now you receive Jesus abiding in you forever. Jesus is the source of your eternal life.

You are a child of God who has been translated into heaven into the kingdom of Jesus. The first meal you have with Jesus is communion. Jesus says he will not drink of the vine again until he drinks it new with you in the Father's kingdom.

Communion is partaking of the offering by which we are made holy and set apart to be God's people.

Our first communion satisfies us with everything we will ever need to receive from God.

We continue to take communion in remembrance of Jesus.

To remember Jesus' holiness, that he lived without sin, to proclaim his death on the cross on our behalf, to declare his blood has been presented in heaven making atonement for us, to celebrate that we now have Jesus abiding in us and that we have everlasting life. We have been saved and redeemed – all is finished. Communion is the expression of the people of God being in union with God. We live with God by celebrating what God has done for us. We remember Jesus. And in doing so, we remember who we also are. We are now conformed to Jesus. We are now as he is.

Hearing Jesus

Luke 10:38 Now it came to pass, as they went, that he entered into a certain village: and a certain woman named Martha received him into her house.

10:39 And she had a sister called Mary, which also sat at Jesus' feet, and heard his word.

10:40 But Martha was cumbered about much serving, and came to him, and said, Lord, do thou not care that my sister has left me to serve alone? bid her therefore that she help me.

10:41 And Jesus answered and said unto her, Martha, Martha, thou art careful and troubled about many things:
10:42 But one thing is needful: and Mary has chosen that good part, which shall not be taken away from her.

To every Christian, I have a simple request. Quit doing so much serving. Sit and listen to Jesus. When you have heard the truth and know you have eternal life and will never die, then go back to serving and doing other good works. You will have plenty of time.

Your first good work is to listen to Jesus. Your second good work is to live righteously. Your third good work is to rise every morning, healthy and alive. These are like the ABC's of the gospel. They give you wisdom and instruction and strength to then do all the rest of the unique good works the Father has created you to do. When you are full of zeal for God, but lack knowledge, you are busy, but you are missing the mark. Become a child of God, righteous, immortal, incorruptible, full of wisdom, grace and truth. Then go to the nations and make disciples. You have to be a disciple yourself before you can make another disciple.

Being Blessed

John 20:19 Then the same day at evening, being the first day of the week, when the doors were shut where the disciples were assembled for fear of the Jews, came Jesus and stood in the midst, and said unto them, Peace be unto you.

20:20 And when he had so said, he showed unto them his hands and his side. Then were the disciples glad, when they saw the LORD.

20:21 Then said Jesus to them again, Peace be unto you: as my Father has sent me, even so send I you.

20:22 And when he had said this, he breathed on them, and said unto them, Receive you the Holy Spirit: 20:23 Whosoever sins you remit, they are remitted unto them; and whosoever sins you retain, they are retained.

20:24 But Thomas, one of the twelve, called Didymus, was not with them when Jesus came. 20:25 The other disciples therefore said unto him, We have seen the LORD.

But he said unto them, Except I shall see in his hands the print of the nails, and put my finger into the print of the nails, and thrust my hand into his side, I will not believe.

20:26 And after eight days again his disciples were within, and Thomas with them: then came Jesus, the doors being shut, and stood in the midst, and said, Peace be unto you.

20:27 Then said he to Thomas, Reach hither thy finger, and behold my hands; and reach hither thy hand, and thrust it into my side: and **be not faithless, but believing.**

20:28 And Thomas answered and said unto him, My LORD and my God.

20:29 Jesus said unto him, Thomas, because thou has seen me, thou has believed: **blessed are they that have not seen, and yet have believed.**

20:30 And many other signs truly did Jesus in the presence

of his disciples, which are not written in this book: 20:31 But these are written, that you might believe that Jesus is the Christ, the Son of God; and that believing you might have life through his name.

Jesus said unto him, Thomas, because thou has seen me, thou has believed:

If you are like Thomas and must see Jesus with your eyes in order to believe, then Jesus will let you see him. Jesus will let you die, go to heaven, and see him. But it comes at a cost. You will see the kingdom is also now on earth. And now you are in heaven. Your inheritance was the earth.

Blessed are the meek for they shall inherit the earth. Blessed are they that have not seen, and yet have believed. By sight you can be with Jesus in the kingdom of God in heaven. By faith you can be with Jesus in the kingdom of God on earth. To be with Jesus in the kingdom of God on earth is by far the best outcome.

How do you not be faithless? How do you get faith? Faith comes by hearing and hearing by the word of God. Who has ears which can hear? A disciple. If you spend time reading the word of God letting Jesus teach you, you will hear the truth and you will be full of faith. You will have the faith and understanding needed to receive your full blessing and inheritance. God will give you the kingdom of God on earth.

Matthew 5:3 Blessed are the poor in spirit: for theirs is the kingdom of heaven.

5:4 Blessed are they that mourn: for they shall be comforted.

5:5 Blessed are the meek: for they shall inherit the earth.

5:6 Blessed are they which do hunger and thirst after righteousness: for they shall be filled.

5:7 Blessed are the merciful: for they shall obtain mercy.

5:8 Blessed are the pure in heart: for they shall see God.

5:9 Blessed are the peacemakers: for they shall be called the children of God.

God is spirit. Those who are poor in spirit – those who don't have much of God inside – their blessing is the kingdom of heaven. They won't believe unless they can see, so they go to heaven and see Jesus. Theirs is the kingdom of God in heaven.

Jesus is meek. Blessed are the meek – those who have a rich life with Jesus – their blessing is to inherit the kingdom of God on earth.

To mourn is to fast. Blessed are they that mourn – that fast – for they shall be comforted. The comforter is the Holy Spirit. By fasting, by mourning over sin, by crying out to God with all your body, soul and spirit in repentance – you are blessed. God answers your cry and gives you himself. God gives you the Holy Spirit.

Blessed are they which hunger and thirst after righteousness for they shall be filled. When you are thirsty you must have water. When you are hungry you must have food. They are strong desires which compel you to action. You will stop and leave what you are doing, in order to go seek and get what you need.

You have to want to be righteous. You have to want to cease from all sin. You must hunger and thirst after righteous with the intensity of someone so hunger and thirst they will die if they don't get water and food. Seek God's kingdom and his righteousness. When you do, God will bless you. God will fill you completely full with righteousness.

Psalm 103:1 Bless the LORD, O my soul: and all that is within me, bless his holy name.

103:2 Bless the LORD, O my soul, and forget not all his benefits:

103:3 Who forgives all thine iniquities;
who heals all thy diseases;

103:4 Who redeems thy life from destruction;
who crowns thee with lovingkindness and tender mercies;

103:5 Who satisfies thy mouth with good things; so that thy youth is renewed like the eagle's.

103:6 The LORD executes righteousness and judgment for all that are oppressed.

Psalm 116:12 What shall I render unto the LORD for all his benefits toward me?

116:13 I will take the cup of salvation, and call upon the name of the LORD.

In communion, when we drink the blood of Jesus, we are drinking the cup of salvation. We have redemption by the blood of Jesus, the forgiveness of sins. We are saved. We are made whole, body, soul and spirit. In communion we drink the cup of salvation, the cup of blessing. In communion we celebrate that Jesus' blood sets us free of sin and death. We are saved, we are redeemed. We are blessed. We are now on the earth, righteous, enjoying our inheritance.

Overview of the Good News

now once in the end of the world Jesus has appeared to put away sin by the sacrifice of himself. (Hebrews 9:26)

John saw Jesus coming unto him, and said, Behold the Lamb of God, which takes away the sin of the world. (John 1:29)

All unrighteousness is sin (1 John 5:17)

the LORD has laid on him the iniquity of us all (Isaiah 53:6)

he has poured out his soul unto death (Isaiah 53:12)

by his own blood Christ entered in once into the holy place, having obtained eternal redemption for us (Hebrews 9:12)

when Jesus had by himself purged our sins, he sat down on the right hand of the Majesty on high (Hebrews 1:3)

we are sanctified through the offering of the body of Jesus Christ (Hebrews 10:10)

by one offering he has perfected forever them that are sanctified. (Hebrews 10:14)

The disciple is not above his master: but everyone that is perfect shall be as his master. (Luke 6:40)

they shall call them, The holy people, The redeemed of the LORD (Isaiah 62:12)

this is the will of God, even your sanctification (1 Thessalonians 4:3)

God has called us unto holiness. (1 Thessalonians 4:7)

God has also given unto us his Holy Spirit. (1 Thessalonians 4:8)

And now why do you tarry? Arise, and be baptized, and

wash away your sins, calling on the name of the Lord.
(Acts 22:16)

Repent, and be baptized every one of you in the name of Jesus Christ for the remission of sins, and you shall receive the gift of the Holy Spirit. For the promise is unto you, and to your children, and to all that are afar off, even as many as the LORD our God shall call. (Acts 2:38-39)

I am the LORD your God: you shall therefore sanctify yourselves, and you shall be holy; for I am holy (Leviticus 11:44)

I am the LORD that brings you up out of the land of Egypt, to be your God: you shall therefore be holy, for I am holy (Leviticus 11:45)

He that believes and is baptized shall be saved (Mark 16:16)

according to his mercy he saved us, by the washing of regeneration, and renewing of the Holy Spirit; which he shed on us abundantly through Jesus Christ our Savior (Titus 3:5-6)

you are washed, you are sanctified, you are justified in the name of the Lord Jesus, and by the Spirit of our God. (1 Corinthians 6:11)

God has from the beginning chosen you to salvation through sanctification of the Spirit and belief of the truth: whereunto he called you by our gospel, to the obtaining of the glory of our Lord Jesus Christ. (2 Thessalonians 2:13-14)

as many as received Jesus, to them he gave power to become the sons of God, even to them that believe on his name: who were born of God. (John 1:12-13)

I have said, You are gods; and all of you are children of the most High. (Psalms 82:6)

For the Son of man is not come to destroy men's lives, but to save them. (Luke 9:56)

both he that sanctifies and they who are sanctified are all of one: for which cause Jesus is not ashamed to call them brethren, saying, I will declare thy name unto my brethren, in the midst of the church I will sing praise unto thee. And again, Behold I and the children which God has given me. (Hebrews 2:11-13)

I have not concealed thy lovingkindness and thy truth from the great congregation (Psalms 40:10)

I have preached righteousness in the great congregation (Psalms 40:9)

I have declared thy faithfulness and thy salvation (Psalms 40:10)

the LORD takes pleasure in his people: he will beautify the meek with salvation. (Psalms 149:4)

Blessed are the meek: for they shall inherit the earth. (Matthew 5:5)

the meek shall inherit the earth; and shall delight themselves in the abundance of peace. (Psalms 37:11)

For such as be blessed of him shall inherit the earth; and they that be cursed of him shall be cut off. (Psalm 37:22)

The righteous shall inherit the land, and dwell therein forever. (Psalms 37:29)

The LORD will give strength unto his people; the LORD will bless his people with peace. (Psalms 29:11)

The thoughts of the righteous are right (Proverbs 12:5)

The desire of the righteous is only good (Proverbs 11:23)

He that speaks truth shows forth righteousness (Proverbs

12:17)

Sanctify them through thy truth: thy word is truth. (John 17:17)

if any man be in Christ, he is a new creature: old things are passed away; behold, all things are become new. And all things are of God, who has reconciled us to himself by Jesus Christ (2 Corinthians 5:17-18)

It is God that girds me with strength, and makes my way perfect. (Psalms 18:32)

Now our Lord Jesus Christ himself, and God, even our Father, comfort your hearts, and establish you in every good word and work. the Lord is faithful, who shall establish you, and keep you from evil. (2 Thessalonians 2:16-17,3:3)

no evil shall happen to the just (Proverbs 12:21)

In the way of righteousness is life: and in the pathway thereof there is no death. (Proverbs 12:28)

the gift of God is eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord. (Romans 6:23)

Truly, Truly, I say unto you, If a man keep my saying, he shall never see death. (John 8:51)

I delight to do thy will, O my God: yea, thy law is within my heart. (Psalms 40:8)

And he that sat upon the throne said, Behold, I make all things new. And he said unto me, Write: for these words are true and faithful. And he said unto me, It is done. I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end. I will give unto him that is thirsty of the fountain of the water of life freely. (Revelation 21:5-6)

The Kingdom of God

Luke 17:20 And when he was demanded of the Pharisees, when the kingdom of God should come, he answered them and said, The kingdom of God comes not with observation: 17:21 Neither shall they say, Lo here! or, lo there! for, behold, the kingdom of God is within you.

Luke 12:29 And seek not you what you shall eat, or what you shall drink, neither be you of doubtful mind. 12:30 For all these things do the nations of the world seek after: and your Father knows that you have need of these things.

12:31 But rather seek you the kingdom of God; and all these things shall be added unto you.

12:32 Fear not, little flock; for it is your Father's good pleasure to give you the kingdom.

12:33 Sell that you have, and give alms; provide yourselves bags which wax not old, a treasure in the heavens that fails not, where no thief approaches, neither moth corrupts.

12:34 For where your treasure is, there will your heart be also.

Where your treasure is, there will be also your heart. Your heart is inside your body. Give to the poor and your body will be in heaven. You will have received the kingdom of God. You will be showing righteousness.

Psalm 73:12 Behold, these are the ungodly, who prosper in the world; they increase in riches.

James 2:6 Do not rich men oppress you, and draw you before the judgment seats?

Psalm 72:4 He shall judge the poor of the people, he shall save the children of the needy, and shall break in pieces the oppressor.

Job 27:8 For what is the hope of the hypocrite, though he has gained, when God takes away his soul? 27:13 This is the portion of a wicked man with God, and the heritage of oppressors, which they shall receive of the Almighty. 27:16 Though he heap up silver as the dust, and prepare raiment as the clay; 27:17 He may prepare it, but the just shall put it on, and the innocent shall divide the silver. 27:19 The rich man shall lie down, but he shall not be gathered: he opens his eyes, and he is not. 27:20 Terrors take hold on him as waters, a tempest steals him away in the night. 27:21 The east wind carries him away, and he departs: and as a storm hurls him out of his place. 27:22 For God shall cast upon him, and not spare:

Luke 12:13 And one of the company said unto Jesus, Master, speak to my brother, that he divide the inheritance with me.

12:14 And Jesus said unto him, Man, who made me a judge or a divider over you? 12:15 And he said unto them, Take heed, and beware of covetousness: for a man's life consists not in the abundance of the things which he possesses.

12:16 And he spoke a parable unto them, saying, The ground of a certain rich man brought forth plentifully: 12:17 And he thought within himself, saying, What shall I do, because I have no room where to bestow my fruits? 12:18 And he said, This will I do: I will pull down my barns, and build greater; and there will I bestow all my fruits and my goods. 12:19 And I will say to my soul, Soul, thou has much goods laid up for many years; take thine ease, eat, drink, and be merry.

12:20 But God said unto him, Thou fool, this night thy soul shall be required of thee: then whose shall those things be, which thou has provided? 12:21 So is he that lays up treasure for himself, and is not rich toward God.

The ungodly increase in riches. The ungodly walk past their neighbor in need and do not give him what he lacks in material things. The ungodly walk past Jesus.

We can hold onto money, trust money for the needs of our life, and lose our life. We die and leave everything behind. God breaks apart our body, soul and spirit. We get sent to hell.

Satan lies to you when he says money will solve your problems, that money can be trusted to provide what you need, that men who are doctors will heal your diseases and give you more days of life. Open your eyes and see the liar and the lie for what it is. Your end is you die, are in hell suffering in misery, and are truly broke having nothing.

Be practical. Follow the one who is good, who tells you the truth. Follow Jesus. Jesus will care for you, provide for you, direct you with his eye upon you, and deliver you from evil. Jesus will give you a good life and you will live forever. Give away your money and find true security, being at peace with God.

God now reigns

Isaiah 52:7 How beautiful upon the mountains are the feet of him that brings good tidings, that publishes peace; that brings good tidings of good, that publishes salvation; that says unto Zion, Thy God reigns!

CHAPTER THREE

The doctrine of Jesus Christ scripture summary

To those who believe in Jesus and have been baptized – this is the good news –

You died in baptism, you were translated into heaven, and are now immortal and incorruptible. You are righteous, have a good heart, and cannot sin. You are holy and blessed forever. Jesus has sent you from heaven back to earth because Jesus has given you your inheritance.

Your birthright as a child of God is eternal life. Your blessing is to inherit the earth. You have both your birthright and your blessing. You will never physically die. You have inherited the earth and will remain forever upon it. You are no longer a man, you are now a child of God. The Father and the Son are with you. You have receive the kingdom of God on earth.

The thoughts of the righteous are right. The desires of the righteous are only good. What God your Father wants you to do now is to be yourself. You are a good tree which brings forth good fruit. You cannot bring forth evil because you have a good heart. You abide in the word of God because you love it. You speak the truth and show forth righteousness because you hate lies. You love your enemies because you are perfect like your Father. You want people to be free of sin. You want them to know the truth. You want them to live immortal and righteous lives enjoying being with Jesus forever on the earth. You want them to have what you have.

This is the doctrine of Jesus Christ.

**To those who believe in Jesus and have been baptized –
this is the good news**

Salvation – the forgiveness of sins

Matthew 1:21 you shall call his name JESUS: for he shall save his people from their sins.

Luke 9:56 the Son of man is not come to destroy men's lives, but to save them.

Mark 16:16 He that believes and is baptized shall be saved.

Acts 2:38-39 Repent, and be baptized every one of you in the name of Jesus Christ for the remission of sins, and you shall receive the gift of the Holy Spirit. For the promise is unto you, and to your children, and to all that are afar off, even as many as the LORD our God shall call.

Acts 5:30 The God of our fathers raised up Jesus, whom you slew and hanged on a tree. 5:31 Him has God exalted with his right hand to be a Prince and a Savior, for to give repentance to Israel, and forgiveness of sins. 5:32 And we are his witnesses of these things; and so is also the Holy Spirit, whom God has given to them that obey him.

Psalms 149:4 the LORD takes pleasure in his people: he will beautify the meek with salvation.

Hebrews 5:8 Though Jesus were a Son, yet he learned obedience by the things which he suffered; 5:9 and being made perfect, he became the author of **eternal salvation** unto all them that obey him; 5:10 called of God a high priest after the order of Melchisedec.

Titus 3:5-6 according to his mercy he saved us, by the washing of regeneration, and renewing of the Holy Spirit; which he shed on us abundantly through Jesus Christ our Savior

You died in baptism, you were translated into heaven, and are now immortal and incorruptible.

You died in baptism

Romans 6:3 Know you not, that so many of us as were baptized into Jesus Christ were baptized into his death?

Romans 6:6 our old man is crucified with Christ, that the body of sin might be destroyed, that henceforth we should not serve sin. 6:7 For he that is dead is freed from sin.

Romans 6:4 we are buried with Christ by baptism into death

You are resurrected in baptism

Colossians 2:10,12 You are complete in Christ ... buried with him in baptism, wherein also you are risen with him through the faith of the operation of God, who has raised him from the dead.

Ephesians 2:4 God, who is rich in mercy, for his great love wherewith he loved us, 2:5 Even when we were dead in sins, has quickened us together with Christ, (by grace you are saved;) 2:6 And has raised us up together, and made us sit together in heavenly places in Christ Jesus: 2:7 That in the ages to come he might show the exceeding riches of his grace in his kindness toward us through Christ Jesus.

2 Corinthians 5:17-18 if any man be in Christ, he is a new creature: old things are passed away; behold, all things are become new. And all things are of God, who has reconciled us to himself by Jesus Christ

Galatians 6:14 But God forbid that I should glory, save in the cross of our Lord Jesus Christ, by whom the world is crucified unto me, and I unto the world. 6:15 For in Christ Jesus neither circumcision avails anything, nor uncircumcision, but a new creature.

You were translated into heaven

Colossians 1:13 the Father has delivered us from the power of darkness, and has translated us into the kingdom of his dear Son: 1:14 in whom we have redemption through his blood, even the forgiveness of sins.

Translate – to convey into heaven without death.

The Father has delivered us from the power of darkness and has conveyed us into heaven without death into the kingdom of his dear Son, in whom we have redemption through his blood, even the forgiveness of sins.

You are now immortal and incorruptible

Psalms 49:6 They that trust in their wealth, and boast themselves in the multitude of their riches, 49:7 none of them can by any means redeem his brother, 49:9 that he should still live forever, and not see corruption.

What is redemption? You live forever and do not see corruption.

Hebrews 9:12 by his own blood Jesus Christ entered in once into the holy place, having obtained **eternal redemption** for us.

We have redemption through the blood of Jesus, we live forever and do not see corruption. Jesus gives us immortality and incorruptibility.

Galatians 4:3 we, when we were children, were in bondage under the elements of the world: 4:4 but when the fullness of the time was come, God sent forth his Son, made of a woman, made under the law, 4:5 to redeem them that were under the law, that we might receive the adoption of sons. 4:6 And because you are sons, God has sent forth the Spirit of his Son into your hearts, crying, Abba, Father.

Titus 2:14 our Savior Jesus Christ gave himself for us, that he might redeem us from all iniquity, and purify unto himself a peculiar people, zealous of good works.

Isaiah 62:12 they shall call them, The holy people, The redeemed of the LORD

Acts 13:22 God raised up unto them David to be their king; to whom also he gave their testimony, and said, I have found David the son of Jesse, a man after mine own heart, which shall fulfill all my will. 13:23 Of this man's seed has God according to his promise raised unto Israel a Savior, Jesus:

13:26 Men and brethren, children of the stock of Abraham, and whosoever among you fears God, to you is the word of this salvation sent. 13:27 For they that dwell at Jerusalem, and their rulers, because they knew him not, nor yet the voices of the prophets which are read every sabbath day, they have fulfilled them in condemning him. 13:28 And though they found no cause of death in him, yet desired they Pilate that he should be slain. 13:29 And when they had fulfilled all that was written of him, they took him down from the tree, and laid him in a sepulchre.

13:30 But God raised him from the dead: 13:31 And he was seen many days of them which came up with him from Galilee to Jerusalem, who are his witnesses unto the people. 13:32 And we declare unto you glad tidings, how that the promise which was made unto the fathers, 13:33 God has fulfilled the same unto us their children, in that he has raised up Jesus again; as it is also written in the second psalm, Thou art my Son, this day have I begotten thee.

13:34 And as concerning that he raised him up from the dead, now no more to return to corruption, he said on this wise, I will give you the sure mercies of David. 13:35 Wherefore he said also in another psalm, Thou shalt not suffer thine Holy One to see corruption. 13:36 For David, after he had served his own generation by the will of God, fell on sleep, and was laid unto his fathers, and saw corruption: 13:37 But he, whom God raised again, saw no corruption.

13:38 Be it known unto you therefore, men and brethren, that through this man is preached unto you the forgiveness of sins: 13:39 And by him all that believe are justified from all things, from which you could not be justified by the law of Moses.

**You are righteous, have a good heart, and cannot sin.
You are holy and blessed forever.**

You have been freed from sin

Matthew 1:21 you shall call his name JESUS: for he shall save his people from their sins.

John 1:29 The next day John sees Jesus coming unto him, and said, Behold the Lamb of God, which takes away the sin of the world.

Hebrews 1:3 when Jesus had by himself purged our sins, he sat down on the right hand of the Majesty on high

Acts 22:16 And now why do you tarry? Arise, and be baptized, and wash away your sins, calling on the name of the Lord.

Romans 6:6 our old man is crucified with Christ, that the body of sin might be destroyed, that henceforth we should not serve sin. 6:7 For he that is dead is freed from sin.

Isaiah 38:17 thou has in love to my soul delivered it from the pit of corruption: for thou has cast all my sins behind thy back.

Romans 6:22 But now being made free from sin, and become servants to God, you have your fruit unto holiness, and the end everlasting life. 6:23 For the wages of sin is death; but the gift of God is eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord.

Romans 6:18 Being then made free from sin, you became the servants of righteousness.

You are righteous

Romans 3:21 now the righteousness of God without the law is manifested, being witnessed by the law and the prophets; 3:22 even the righteousness of God which is by faith of Jesus Christ unto all and upon all them that believe

1 John 5:17 All unrighteousness is sin

Acts 22:16 And now why do you tarry? Arise, and be baptized, and wash away your sins, calling on the name of the Lord.

1 Corinthians 6:11 you are washed, you are sanctified, you are justified in the name of the Lord Jesus, and by the Spirit of our God.

Titus 3:5 according to his mercy he saved us, by the washing of regeneration, and renewing of the Holy Spirit; 3:6 which he shed on us abundantly through Jesus Christ our Savior; 3:7 that being justified by his grace, we should be made heirs according to the hope of eternal life.

Romans 6:18 Being then made free from sin, you became the servants of righteousness.

Romans 5:17 they which receive abundance of grace and of the gift of righteousness shall reign in life by one, Jesus Christ

You have a good heart

Ezekiel 18:30 I will judge you, O house of Israel, every one according to his ways, says the Lord GOD. Repent, and turn yourselves from all your transgressions; so iniquity shall not be your ruin. 18:31 Cast away from you all your transgressions, whereby you have transgressed; and make you a new heart and a new spirit: for why will you die, O house of Israel? 18:32 For I have no pleasure in the death

of him that dies, says the Lord GOD: wherefore turn yourselves, and you live.

Ezekiel 36:24 For I will take you from among the heathen, and gather you out of all countries, and will bring you into your own land. 36:25 Then will I sprinkle clean water upon you, and you shall be clean: from all your filthiness, and from all your idols, will I cleanse you.

36:26 A new heart also will I give you, and a new spirit will I put within you: and I will take away the stony heart out of your flesh, and I will give you an heart of flesh. 36:27 And I will put my spirit within you, and cause you to walk in my statutes, and you shall keep my judgments, and do them.

Acts 15:7 Peter rose up, and said unto them, Men and brethren, you know how that a good while ago God made choice among us, that the Gentiles by my mouth should hear the word of the gospel, and believe. 15:8 And God, which knows the hearts, bore them witness, giving them the Holy Spirit, even as he did unto us; 15:9 And put no difference between us and them, purifying their hearts by faith.

Luke 8:11 Now the parable is this: The seed is the word of God. 8:15 that on the good ground are they, which in a honest and good heart, having heard the word, keep it, and bring forth fruit with patience.

Luke 6:45 A good man out of the good treasure of his heart brings forth that which is good; and an evil man out of the evil treasure of his heart brings forth that which is evil: for of the abundance of the heart his mouth speaks. 6:43 For a good tree brings not forth corrupt fruit; neither does a corrupt tree bring forth good fruit. 6:44 For every tree is known by his own fruit.

You cannot sin

1 John 5:1 Whosoever believes that Jesus is the Christ is born of God.

1 John 3:9 Whosoever is born of God does not commit sin; for his seed remains in him: and he cannot sin, because he is born of God.

1 John 3:6 Whosoever abides in him sins not: whosoever sins has not seen him, neither known him.

You are holy and blessed forever.

Leviticus 11:44 I am the LORD your God: you shall therefore sanctify yourselves, and you shall be holy; for I am holy

Hebrews 10:10 we are sanctified through the offering of the body of Jesus Christ

Hebrews 10:14 by one offering he has perfected forever them that are sanctified

Luke 6:40 The disciple is not above his master: but everyone that is perfect shall be as his master.

Isaiah 62:12 they shall call them, The holy people, The redeemed of the LORD

1 Thessalonians 4:3 this is the will of God, even your sanctification

1 Thessalonians 4:7 God has called us unto holiness.

John 17:17 Sanctify them through thy truth: thy word is truth.

2 Thessalonians 2:13-14 God has from the beginning chosen you to salvation through sanctification of the Spirit and belief of the truth: whereunto he called you by our gospel, to the obtaining of the glory of our Lord Jesus Christ.

1 Chronicles 17:26 And now, LORD, thou art God, and has promised this goodness unto thy servant: 17:27 Now therefore let it please thee to bless the house of thy servant, that it may be before thee forever: for thou blessest, O LORD, and it shall be blessed forever.

John 20:29 Jesus said unto him, Thomas, because thou has seen me, thou has believed: blessed are they that have not seen, and yet have believed.

Luke 24:50 And Jesus led them out as far as to Bethany, and he lifted up his hands, and blessed them. 24:51 And it came to pass, while he blessed them, he was parted from them, and carried up into heaven.

Jesus has sent you from heaven back to earth because Jesus has given you your inheritance.

John 17:15 [Jesus speaking] I pray not that thou should take them out of the world, but that thou should keep them from the evil. 17:16 They are not of the world, even as I am not of the world. 17:18 As thou has sent me into the world, even so I have also sent them into the world.

Your birthright as a child of God is eternal life. Your blessing is to inherit the earth. You have both your birthright and your blessing.

John 20:29 Jesus said unto him, Thomas, because thou has seen me, thou has believed: blessed are they that have not seen, and yet have believed.

Mathew 5:5 Blessed are the meek: for they shall inherit the earth.

Psalms 37:22 For such as be blessed of him shall inherit the earth; and they that be cursed of him shall be cut off.

Romans 6:23 the gift of God is eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord.

You will never physically die.

John 8:51 Truly, Truly, I say unto you, If a man keep my saying, he shall never see death.

John 10:27 My sheep hear my voice, and I know them, and they follow me: 10:28 And I give unto them eternal life; and they shall never die, neither shall any man pluck them out of my hand.

2 Timothy 1:10 our Savior Jesus Christ has abolished death, and has brought life and immortality to light through the gospel

1 John 5:11 God has given to us eternal life, and this life is in his Son. 5:12 He that has the Son has life.

John 5:24 [Jesus said,] Truly, Truly, I say unto you, He that hears my word, and believes on him that sent me, has everlasting life, and shall not come into condemnation; but is passed from death unto life.

Revelation 21:6 And he said unto me, It is done. I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end. I will give unto him that is thirsty of the fountain of the water of life freely.

Psalms 29:11 The LORD will give strength unto his people; the LORD will bless his people with peace.

Proverbs 12:28 In the way of righteousness is life: and in the pathway thereof there is no death.

Romans 6:5 if we have been planted together in the likeness of his death, we shall be also in the likeness of his resurrection:

Romans 6:8 Now if we be dead with Christ, we believe that we shall also live with him:

Romans 6:9 Christ being raised from the dead dies no more; death has no more dominion over him. 6:10 For in that he died, he died unto sin once: but in that he lives, he lives unto God. 6:11 Likewise reckon you also yourselves to be dead indeed unto sin, but alive unto God through Jesus Christ our Lord.

You have inherited the earth and will remain forever upon it.

Psalm 37:29 The righteous shall inherit the land, and dwell therein forever.

Mathew 5:5 Blessed are the meek: for they shall inherit the earth.

Psalm 37:11 the meek shall inherit the earth; and shall delight themselves in the abundance of peace.

You are no longer a man, you are now a child of God.

You are no longer a man

Psalm 82:6 I have said, You are gods; and all of you are children of the most High.

John 1:12-13 as many as received Jesus, to them he gave power to become the sons of God, even to them that believe on his name: who were born of God.

2 Corinthians 5:17-18 if any man be in Christ, he is a new creature: old things are passed away; behold, all things are become new. And all things are of God, who has reconciled us to himself by Jesus Christ

You are now a child of God

Galatians 3:26 For you are all the children of God by faith in Christ Jesus. 3:27 For as many of you as have been baptized into Christ have put on Christ.

Romans 6:5 if we have been planted together in the likeness of his death, we shall be also in the likeness of his resurrection:

Hebrews 2:11-13 both he that sanctifies and they who are sanctified are all of one: for which cause Jesus is not ashamed to call them brethren, saying, I will declare thy name unto my brethren, in the midst of the church I will sing praise unto thee. And again, Behold I and the children which God has given me.

1 Corinthians 1:30 But of God are you in Christ Jesus, who of God is made unto us wisdom, and righteousness, and sanctification, and redemption: 1:31 that, according as it is written, He that glories, let him glory in the Lord.

The Father and the Son are with you.

2 John 1:9 He that abides in the doctrine of Christ, he has both the Father and the Son.

You have receive the kingdom of God on earth.

Luke 17:20 And when Jesus was demanded of the Pharisees, when the kingdom of God should come, he answered them and said, The kingdom of God comes not with observation: 17:21 Neither shall they say, Lo here! or, lo there! for, behold, the kingdom of God is within you.

Luke 12:32 Fear not, little flock; for it is your Father's good pleasure to give you the kingdom.

Other mentioned scriptures

Proverbs 12:5 The thoughts of the righteous are right

Proverbs 11:23 The desire of the righteous is only good

Proverbs 12:17 He that speaks truth shows forth righteousness

Author Biography

Dee Henderson is the author of numerous novels and non-fiction titles, including *Jesus: the Truth and the Life, Taken*, and the acclaimed O'MALLEY series. Several titles have appeared on the USA Today Bestseller list. For more information, visit www.DeeHenderson.com

Contact information

The Author welcomes your feedback.

Dee Henderson
dee@deehenderson.com
www.deehenderson.com

Books by Dee Henderson

The Most Recent Releases

Finding Jesus, Finding Life – the following 4 printout titles in Hardback format

Being a disciple of Jesus Christ – 88 page printout

Jesus : Our Savior and Redeemer – 80 page printout

Jesus : the Truth and the Life – 100 page printout

The Good News Project – 50 page printout

Immortality (fiction)

Companion Books (read one or the other)

Healing is by Grace Alone (non-fiction)

An Unfinished Death (fiction)

The O'Malley Series

The Negotiator – Kate and Dave

The Guardian – Shari and Marcus

The Truth Seeker – Lisa and Quinn

The Protector – Cassie and Jack

The Healer – Rachel and Cole

The Rescuer – Meghan and Stephen

Danger in the Shadows (prequel - Dave's story)

Jennifer: An O'Malley Love Story (prequel - Jennifer's backstory)

Full Disclosure – Ann and Paul Falcon

Unspoken – Charlotte and Bryce Bishop

Undetected – Gina and Mark Bishop

Taken – Shannon and Matthew Dane

Evie Blackwell Stories

Traces of Guilt

Threads of Suspicion

Military Stories*True Devotion**True Valor**True Honor*Various Other Titles*Kidnapped**The Witness**Before I Wake**The Marriage Wish**God's Gift*Short Stories*"Missing"* in anthology *Sins of the Past**"Betrayed"* in anthology *The Cost of Betrayal*

www.DeeHenderson.com